ADVENTURES

OF

Roderick Random.

Et genus & virtus, nisi cum re, vilior alga est. Hori

VOL. II.

THE NINTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for W. Strahan, J. & F. Riwington, Hawes & Co. W. Johnston, T. Casson, B. Law, E. & C. Dilly, T. Becket, T. Lowndes, G. Robinson, T. Cadell, J. Knox, W. Nicoll, T. Durham, R. Baldwin, and J. Richardson.

M.DCC.LXXIV.

22MAY 1952





CONTENTS

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

CHAP. XXXVII. We depart for Europe—
a misunderstanding arises between the captain and surgeon, through the scandalous aspersions of Crampley—the captain dies—Crampley tyrannizes over the surgeon, wno salls a victim to his cruelty—I am also ill used—the ship strikes—the behaviour of Crampley and the seamen on that occasion—I get on shore, challenge the captain to single combat—am treacherously knocked down, wounded, and robbed.

CHAP. XXXVIII. I get up, and crawl to a barn, where I am in danger of perishing through the fear of the country people—their inhumanity—I am succoured by a reputed witch—her story—her advice——she recommends me as a valet to a single lady, whose character she explains. p. 7

CHAP. XXXIX. My reception by that lady—
I become enamoured of Narcisia—recount the particulars of my last misfortune—acquire the good opinion of my mistress—an account of the young Squire—I am made acquainted with more particulars of Narchsa's situation—Conceive a mortal hatred against Sir Timothy—examine my lady's library and performances—her extravagant behaviour.

p. 16

CHAP, XL. My mistress is surprised at my learning—communicates her performances to me-I

A 2

impart.

impart some of mine to her—am mortissed at her faint praise—Narcissa approves of my production—I gain an involuntary conquest over the cookwench and dairy maid—their mutual resentment and infinuations—the jealousy of their lovers.

CHAP. XLI. Narcissa being in danger from the brutality of Sir Timothy, is rescued by me, who revenge myself on my rival——I declare my passion, and retreat to the sea-side—am surrounded by sinugglers, and carried to Bulloign—find my uncle lieutenant Bowling in great distress, and relieve him—our conversation.

p. 31

CHAP. XLII. He takes his passage in a cutter for Deal——we are accosted by a priest, who proves to be a Scotchman——his prosession of friendship—he is affronted by the lieutenant, who afterwards appeases him by submission—my uncle embasks—I am introduced by the priest to a capuchin, in whose company I set out for Paris—the character of my sellow traveller——an adventure on the road—I am shocked at his behaviour.

p. 41

CHAP. XLIII. We lodged at a house near Amiens, where I am robbed by the capuchin, who escapes while I am asseep—I go to Noyons in search of him, but without success—make my condition known to several people, but find no relief—grow desperate—join a company of sailors—enlist in the regiment of Picardy—we are ordered into Germany—I find the satigues of the march almost intolerable—quarrel with my comrade in a dispute about politics—he challenges me to the field, wounds and disarms me.

p. 49

CHAP. XLIV. In order to be revenged I learn the science of defence—we join Mareschal Duc de Noailles—are engaged with the allies at Dettingen, and put to flight—the behaviour of the French

French foldiers on that occasion—I industriously seek another combat with the old Gascon, and vanquish him in my turn—our regiment is put into winter-quarters at Rheims, where I find my friend Strap—our recognition—he supplies me with money and procures my discharge—we take a trip to Paris; from whence we set out for London, by the way of Flanders, where we safely arrive.

P. 57

CHAP. XLVI. Wagtail introduces me to a fet of fine gentlemen, with whom I fpend the evening at a tavern—our conversation—the characters of my new companions—the doctor is roasted—the issue of our debauch.

CHAP. XLVII. Strap communicates to me a conquest he had made of a chandler's widow——finds himself miserably mistaken——I go to the opera——admire Melinda———am cautioned by Banter—go to the assembly at Hampstead——dance with that young lady——receive an insolent message from Bragwell, whose mettle is soon cooled——am in favour with my mistress, whom I visit next day; and am bubbled out of eighteen guineas at cards——Strap triumphs at my success, but is assonished at my expence——Banter comes to my lodging, is very farcastic at my expence, and borrows five guineas from me, as a proof of his friendship.

p. 100

CHAP. XLVIII. We repair to the coffee-house, where we overhear a curious dispute between Wag-tail and Medlar, which is referred to our decision

—the doctor gives an account of his experiment— Medlar is roasted by Banter at the ordinary—the old gentleman's advice to me.

p. 110

- P. 115
 CHAP. L. I long to be revenged on Melinda
 ---apply to Banter for his affistance---he contrives
 a scheme for that purpose, which is put in execution with great success——I make an attempt on
 the heart of Miss Gripewell, but am disappointed
 —grow melancholy at my disappointment, and
 have recourse to the bottle---receive a billet-doux
 ---am ravished with the contents——find myself
 involved in an intrigue, which I imagined would
 make my fortune——am consounded at my mistake, which banishes all thoughts of matrimony.
- CHAP. LI. I cultivate an acquaintance with two noblemen—am introduced to Earl Strutwell—his kind promife and invitation—the behaviour of his porter and lacquey—he receives me with an appearance of uncommon affection—undertakes to speak in my behalf to the minister—informs me of his success, and wishes me joy—introduces a conversation about Petronius Arbiter—falls in love with my watch, which I press upon him——I make a present of a diamond ring to lord Straddle—impart my good fortune to Strap

and Banter, who disabuses me, to my utter mortification.

p. 137

CHAP. LII. I attempt to recover my watch and jewel, but to no purpose---resolve to revenge myfelf on Strutwell by my importunity----am reduced to my last guinea-obliged to inform Strap of my necessity, who is almost distracted with the news-but nevertheless obliged to pawn my best fword for present subfistence—that small supply being exhausted, I am almost stupisted with my misfortunes—go to the gaming table, by the advice of Banter, and come off with unexpected fuccess --- Strap's extasy --- Mrs. Gawky waits upon me, professes remorfe for her perfidy, and implores my affiftance --- I do myfelf a piece of juftice by her means, and afterwards reconcile her to her father. p. 147

CHAP. LIII. I purchase new clothes—reprimand Strutwell and Straddle—Banter proposes another matrimonial scheme—I accept of his terms—fet out for Bath in a stage-coach, with the young lady and her mother—the behaviour of an officer and lawyer, our fellow-travellers, described—a smart dialogue between my mistress and the captain.

p. 158

CHAP. LIV. Day-breaking, I have the pleasure of viewing the person of Miss Snapper, whom I had not seen before---the soldier is witty upon me---is offended, talks much of his valour——is reprimanded by a grave gentlewoman——we are alarmed with the cry of highwaymen—I get out of the coach, and stand on my own defence—they ride off without having attacked us---I pursue them---- one of them is thrown from his horse and taken--- return to the coach——am complimented by Miss Snapper——the captain's behaviour on this occa-- sion--- the prude reproaches me in a soliloquy——

CHAP. LV. I refolve to ingratiate myfelf with the mother, and am favoured by accident——the precise lady finds her husband, and quits the coach --- the captain is disappointed of his dinner—— we arrive at Bath--- I accompany Miss Snapper to the Long Room, where the is attacked by beau Nash, and turns the laugh against him—I make love to her, and receive a check-fquire her to an affembly, where I am bleft with a fight of my dear Narciffa, which discomposes me so much, that Miss Snapper observing my disorder, is at pains to discover the cause --- is piqued at the occasion, and in our way home, pays me a farcastic compliment-I am met by Miss Williams, who is maid and confidant of Narcissa—-- she acquaints me with her lady's regard for me while under the difguise of a fervant, and describes the transports of Narcisla on feeing me at the affembly, in the character of a gentleman - 1 am surprised with an account of her aunt's marriage, and make an appointment to meet Miss Williams next day.

CHAP. LVI. I become acquainted wich Narciffa's brother, who invites me to his house——where I am introduced to that adorable creature——after dinner the Squire retires to take his nap——-Freeman guesses the situation of my thoughts, withdraws likewise on pretence of business——I declare my passion for Narcissa—am well received—charmed with her conversation—the Squire detains us to supper—I elude his design by a stratagem, and get home sober.

Description invites me to his house—street as the name of the squire detains us to supper—I elude his design by a stratagem, and get home sober.

CHAP. LVII. Miss Williams informs me of Narcissa's approbation of my slame——I appease the

the Squire, write to my mistress, am blessed with an answer—beg leave of her brother to dance with her at a ball; obtain his consent and hers—enjoy a private conversation with her—am perplexed with reslections—have the honour of appearing her partner at a ball—we are complimented by a certain nobleman—he discovers some symptoms of passion for Narcissa—I am stung with jealousy—Narcissa alarmed, retires—I observe Melinga in the company—the Squire is captivated by her beauty.

p. 196

CHAP. LVIII. Tortured with jealoufy, I go home and abuse Strap -- receive a message from Narcissa, in consequence of which I hasten to her apartment, where her endearing affurances banish all my doubts and apprehensions----in my retreat discover somebody in the dark, whom suspecting to be a fpy, I refolve to kill; but to my great furprife, am convinced of his being no other than Strap — Melinda flanders me — I become acquainted with Lord Quiverwit, who endeavours to found me with regard to Narcissa—the Squire is introduced to his lordship, and grows cold towards me I learn from my confidant, that this nobleman professes honourable love to my mistress, who continues faithful to me, notwithstanding the scandalous reports she has heard to my prejudice—I am mortified with an affurance that her whole fortune depends upon the pleasure of her brother --- Mr. Freeman condoles me on the decline of my character, which I vindicate fo much to his fatisfaction, that he undertakes to combat fame in my behalf. p. 207

CHAP. LIX. I receive an extraordinary mefat the door of the Long Room, which I however enter, and affront the Squire, who threatens to take the law of me—-rebuke Melinda for her

malice

malice—the weeps with vexation—Lord (Qui-
verwit is severe upon me-I retort his sarcasm-	
am received with the utmost tenderness by Narc	iffa,
who defires to hear the story of my life-we	wow
eternal constancy to one another-I retire-	
am awaked by a meffenger, who brings a challe	enge
from Quiverwit, whom I meet, engage, and	an-
quish. p.	214

CHAP. LX. I am visited by Freeman, with whom I appear in public, and am caressed—am sent for by Lord Quiverwit, whose presence I quit in a passion—Narcissa is carried off by her brother—I intend to pursue him, but am dissuaded by my friend—engage in play, and lose all my money—fet out for London—try my fortune at the gaming table without success—receive a letter from Narcissa—bilk my taylor.

p. 222

CHAP. LXI. I am arrested—carried to the Mar-shalsea—find my old acquaintance beau Jackson in that jail—he informs me of his adventures—Strap arrives, and with difficulty is comforted—Jackson introduces me to a poet—I admire his conversation and capacity—am deeply affected with my misfortune—Strap hires himself as a journey—man barber.

p. 230

CHAP. LXII. I read Melopoyn's tragedy, and conceive a vast opinion of his genius—he recounts his adventures.

p. 237

CHAP. LXIII. The continuation and conclusion of Mr. Melopoyn's story.

p. 248

CHAP. LXIV. I am feized with a deep melancholy, and become a floven—am relieved by my uncle—he prevails upon me to engage with his owners, as furgeon of the ship which he commands—he makes me a considerable present—entertains Strap as his steward—I take my leave of my friends. friends, and go on board—the ship arrives at the Downs.

p. 263

CHAP. LXV. I set out for Sussex——consult Mrs. Sagely--atchieve an interview with Narcissar-return to the ship—we get clear of the channel—I learn our destination—we are chased by a large ship---the company are dismayed, and encouraged by the captain's speech—our pursuer happens to be an English man of war—we arrive at the coast of Guinea, purchase 400 negroes, sail for Paraguay, get safe in the river of Plate, and sell our cargo to great advantage.

p. 272

CHAP. LXVI. I am invited to the Villa of a Spanish Don, where we meet with an English gentleman, and make a very interesting discovery we leave Buenos Ayres, and arrive at Jamaica.

p. 282

CHAP. LXVII. I visit my old friend Thomson—we set fail for Europe, meet with an odd adventure—arrive in England—I ride across the country from Portsmouth to Sussex—converse with Mrs. Sagely, who informs me of Narcissa's being in London—in consequence of this intelligence, I proceed to Canterbury—meet with my old friend Morgan—arrive at London—visit Narcissa—introduce my father to her—he is charmed with her good sense and beauty——we come to a determination of demanding her brother's consent to our marriage.

p. 293

CHAP. LXVIII. My father makes a present to Narcissa—the letter is dispatched to her brother—I appear among my acquaintance—Banter's behaviour—the Squire refuses his consent—my uncle comes to town—approves of my choice—I am married—we meet the Squire and his lady at the play—our acquaintance is courted.

p. 305

CHAP. LXIX. My father intends to revisit the

place of his nativity——we propose to accompany him—my uncle renews his will in my favour, determining to go to sea again—we set out for Edinburgh—purchase our paternal estate—proceed to it—halt at the town where I was educated—take up my bond to Crab—behaviour of Potion and his wise, and one of my semale cousins—our reception at the estate—Strap marries Miss Williams, and is settled by my father to his own satisfaction—I am more and more happy.

p. 312



THE

t

dI

2

E

ADVENTURES

OF

RODERICK RANDOM.

CHAP. XXXVII.

NOW that I could return to my native country in a creditable way, I felt excessive pleasure in finding myself out of fight of that fatal island, which has been the grave of so many Europeans; and as I was accommodated with every thing to render the passage agreeable, I resolved to enjoy my-Vol. II.

felf as much as the infolence of Crampley would permit.—This infidious flanderer had found means already to cause a misunderstanding between the furgeon and captain, who by his age and infirmities was rendered intolerably peevifh, his disposition having also been soured by a long course of disappointments. He had a particular aversion to all young men, especially to furgeons, whom he confidered as unnecessary animals on board of a ship;—and in consequence of these sentiments, never consulted the doctor, notwithstanding his being seized with a violent fit of the gout and gravel; but applied to a cask of Hollandgin, which was his fovereign prescription against all diffempers: Whether he was at this time too sparing, or took an overdose of his cordial, certain it is, he departed in the night, without any ceremony, which indeed was a thing he always despised, and was found stiff, next morning, to the no small fatisfaction of Crampley, who succeeded to the command of the vessel.-For that very reason, Mr. Tomlins and I had no cause to rejoice at this event, fearing that the tyranny of our new commander would now be as unlimited as his power.—The first day of his command justified our apprehension: For on pretence that the decks were too much crowded, he ordered the furgeon's hen-coops, with all his fowls, to be thrown overboard; and at the same time prohibited him and me from appearing on the quarterdeck. Mr. Tomlins could not help complaining of these injuries, and in the course of his expostulation dropped some hasty words, of which Crampley taking hold, confined him to his cabin, where, in a few days, for want of air, he was attacked by a fever, which foon put an end to his life, after he had made his will, by which he bequeathed all his estate, perfonal and real, to his fifter; and left to me his watch and instruments as memorials of his friendship.

uld

ans

the

ties

ing

nts.

pe-

lary

e of

not-

the

ind-

t all

ing,

, he

hich

was

atif-

nand

alins

ring

now

his

pre-

e or-

wls,

pro-

rter-

ig of

ation

iking

few

ever,

made

per-

watch

I

I was penetrated with grief on this melancholy occafion; the more because there was nobody on board,
to whom I could communicate my forrows, or of
whom I could receive the least consolation or advice.

—Crampley was so far from discovering the least remorse for his barbarity, at the news of the surgeon's
death, that he insulted his memory in the most abufive manner, and affirmed he had poisoned himself
out of pure fear, dreading to be brought to a courtmartial for mutiny; for which reason, he would not
suffer the service of the dead to be read over his body,
before it was thrown over-board.

Nothing but a speedy deliverance could have supported me under the brutal sway of this bashaw, who to render my life the more irksome, signified to my mess-mates, a desire that I should be expelled from their society.—This was no sooner hinted, than they granted his request; and I was fain to eat in a solitary manner by myself during the rest of the passage, which however soon drew to a period.

We had been feven weeks at fea, when the gunner told the captain, that by his reckoning we must be in foundings, and defired he would order the lead to be heaved. - Crampley swore, he did not know how to keep the ship's way, for we were not within a hundred leagues of foundings, and therefore he would not give himself the trouble to cast the lead. -Accordingly we continued our course all that afternoon and night, without shortening fail, although the gunner pretended to discover Scilly light; and next morning protested in form against the captain's conduct; for which conduct he was put in confinement. We discovered no land all that day, and Crampley was still so infatuated as to neglect founding; but at three o'clock in the morning the thip struck, and remained fait on a fand-bank. dent alarmed the whole crew; the boat was immediately hoisted out, but as we could not discern which

way the shore lay, we were obliged to wait for daylight. In the mean time, the wind increased, and the waves beat against the sloop with such violence, that we expected the would have gone to pieces. gunner was released and consulted: He advised the captain to cut away the mast, in order to lighten her; this expedient was performed without success: The failors feeing things in a desperate situation, according to custom, broke up the chests belonging to the officers, dreffed themselves in their clothes, drank their liquors without ceremony; and drunkenness, tumult, and confusion ensued .- In the midst of this uproar, I went below to fecure my own effects; and found the carpenter's mate hewing down the purfer's cabin with his hatchet, whistling all the while with great composure. When I asked his intention in so doing, he replied very calmly, " I only want to taffe "the purser's rum, that's all, master."-At that instant the purser coming down, and seeing his effects going to wreck, complained bitterly of the injuffice done to him, and asked the fellow what occasion he had for liquor, when in all likelihood he should be in eternity in a few minutes. " All's one for that " (faid the plunderer) let us live while we can." " Miserable wretch that thou art (cried the purser) what must be thy lot in the other world, if thou diest in the commission of robbery?"-" Why hell, cc I suppose," replied the other, with great deliberation, while the purfer fell on his knees, and begged of heaven that we might not all perish for the Take of one Jonas .- During this dialogue, I cloathed myself in my best apparel, girded on my hanger, fluck my piftols loaded in my belt, disposed of all my valuable moveables about my person, and came upon deck with a resolution of taking the first opportunity to get on shore, which when the day broke, appeared at the distance of three miles a-head. - Crampley finding his efforts to get the ship off

ineffectual.

y-

nd

ce,

he

he

r;

he

-d-

he

nk

is,

his

nd

r's

ith

10

ifte

ın-

cts

ice

he

be

hat

(er)

nou

ell,

be-

eg-

the

hed

ger,

all

ame

op-

day

ead.

oft ual,

ineffectual, determined to consult his own safety, by going into the boat, which he had no fooner done, than the ship's company followed so fast, that she would have funk along-fide, had not fome one wifer than the rest cut the rope and put off.—But before this happened, I had made several attempts to get in, and was always baulked by the captain, who was fo eager in excluding me, that he did not mind the endeavours of any other body.—Enraged at this inhuman partiality, and feeing the rope cut, I pulled one of my piftols from my belt, and cocking it, fwore I would shoot any man who should presume to obstruct my entrance. So faying, I leaped with my full exertion, and got on board of the boat with the loss of the skin of my shins. — I chanced in my descent to overturn Crampley, who no sooner got up than he ftruck at me several times with a cutlass, and ordered the men to throw me overboard; but they were too anxious about their own fafety to mind what he faid. -Though the boat was very deeply loaded, and the fea terribly high, we made shift to get upon dry land in less than an hour after we parted from the sloop. -As foon as I fet foot on terra firma, my indignation, which had boiled fo long within me, broke out against Crampley, whom I immediately challenged to fingle combat, prefenting my pittols, that he might take his choice: He took one without hesitation, and before I could cock the other, fired in my face, throwing the pittol after the shot.—— I felt myself stunned, and imagining the bullet had entered my brain, difcharged mine as quick as possible, that I might not die unrevenged: then flying upon my antagonist, knocked out several of his fore-teeth with the butend of the piece, and would certainly have made an end of him with that instrument, had he not difengaged himself, and seized his cutlass, which he had given to his fervant, when he received the piftol. Seeing him armed in this manner, I drew my hanger, B 3

and having flung my pistol at his head, closed with him in a transport of fury, and thrust my weapon into his mouth, which it enlarged on one fide to his ear .- Whether the smart of this wound disconcerted him, or the unevenness of the ground made him reel, I know not; but he staggered some paces back: I followed close, and with one stroke cut the tendons of the back of his hand, upon which his cutlass dropt. and he remained defencelefs.-I know not with what cruelty my rage might have inspired me, if I had not at that instant been felled to the ground by a blow on the back part of my head, which deprived me of all fenfation. - In this deplorable fituation, exposed to the rage of an incenfed barbarian, and the rapine of an inhuman crew, I remained for some time; and whether any disputes arose among them during the flate of my annihilation, I cannot pretend to determine; but in one particular they feem to have been unanimous, and acted with equal dexterity and difpatch; for, when I recovered the use of understanding, I found myself alone in a desolate place, stript of my clothes, money, watch, buckles, and every thing but my shoes, stockings, breeches, and shirt. -What a discovery must this have been to me, who but an hour before was worth fixty guineas in cash! I curfed the hour of my birth, the parents that gave me being, the fea that did not fwallow me up, the poignard of the enemy, which could not find the way to my heart, the villany of those who had left me in that miferable condition; and in the extafy of despair, resolved to lie still where I was and perish.

莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱莱

ith

his ted

el, : [

ons

pt,

hat

not

ow

of fed ine

nd

he

er-

en

if-

id-

ipt

ry

rt.

ho

h!

ve

he

ay

in

ir,

CHAP. XXXVIII.

I get up, and crawl into a barn, where I am in danger of perishing through the fear of the country people—their inhumanity—I am succoured by a reputed witch—her story—her advice——she recommends me as a valet to a single lady, whose character she explains.

TUT as I lay ruminating, my passion intensibly abated; I confidered my fituation in quite another light from that in which it appeared to me at first, and the result of my deliberation was to rise if I could, and crawl to the next inhabited place for affistance.—With some difficulty I got upon my legs, and having examined my body, found I had received no other injury than two large contused wounds, one on the fore and another on the hinder part of my head; which feemed to be occasioned by the same weapon; namely, the but-end of a pistol. I looked towards the fea, but could differ no remains of the ship; so that I concluded she was gone to pieces, and that those who remained in her had perished: But as I afterward's learned, the gunner, who had more fagacity than Crampley, observing that it was flood when he left her, and that she would probably float at high water, made no noise about getting on shore, but continued on deck, in hopes of bringing her late into some harbour, after the commander should have defeated her, for which piece of service he expected, no doubt, to be handsomely rewarded. This scheme he accordingly executed, and was promifed great things by the admiralty for faving his B 4 Majesty's

Majesty's ship; but I never heard he reaped the fruits of his expectation .- As for my own part, I directed my courfe towards a small cottage I perceived. and in the road picked up a feaman's old jacket, which I suppose the thief who dressed himself in my clothes had thrown away; this was a very comfortable acquisition to me, who was almost stiff with cold: I therefore put it on, and as my natural heat revived, my wounds, which had left off bleeding, burst out afresh; so that finding myself excessively exhausted, I was about to lie do in in the fields, when I discovered a barn on my left hand, within a few yards of me: thither I made shift to stagger, and finding the door open, went in, but faw no body; however I threw myself upon a trus of straw, hoping to be soon relieved by some person or other.—I had not lain here many minutes, when I faw a countryman come in with a pitch fork in his hand, which he was upon the point of thrusting into the straw that concealed me, and in all probability would have done my business, had I not uttered a dreadful groan, after having effayed in vain to speak.—This melancholy note alarmed the clown, who started back, and discovering a body all befmeared with blood, stood trembling, with the pitch-fork extended before him, his hair briftling up, his eyes staring, his nostrils dilated, and his mouth wide open.—At another time I should have been much diverted by this figure, which preserved the same attitude very near ten minutes, during which time I made many unfuccefsful efforts to implore his compassion and assistance; but my tongue failed me, and my language was only a repetition of groans: At length an old man arrived, who feeing the other in fuch a posture, cried, "Mercy upon en! the leaad's " hewitched; -why Dick, beeft thou befayd thysielf!"-Dick, without moving his eyes from the object that terrified him, replied, "O vather! vather! here be either the devil or a dead mon: I doant 66 know

ed,

et,

ny

ole

d,

ut

d,

0-

of

he

I

on

re

in

he

e,

S,

y -

ed

ly

1e

p,

h

h

t-

I

-

d

t

n

S

e

V

"know which o'en, but a groans woundily."—The father, whose eye-fight was none of the best, pulled out his spectacles, and having applied them to his nose, reconnoitred me over his son's shoulder: But no fooner did he behold me, than he was feized with a fit of shaking, even more violent than Dick's, and with a broken accent addressed me thus: " In the " name of the Vather, Zun, and Holy Ghost, I " charge you an you been Satan to be gone to the Red " Zea; but an you be a moordered man, speak, that you may have a christom burial."—As I was not in a condition to fatisfy him in this particular, he repeated his conjuration to no purpose; and they continued a good while in the agonies of fear .- At length the father proposed that the son should draw nearer, and take a more distinct view of the apparition; but Dick was of opinion that his father should advance first, as being an old man past his labour, and if he received any mischief, the loss would be the smaller; whereas he himself might escape, and be useful in his generation. — This prudential reason had no effect upon the fenior, who still kept Dick between me and him.—In the mean time I endeavoured to raise one hand as a figural of diffress, but had only strength fufficient to produce a ruftling among the straw, which discomposed the young peasant so much, that he sprung out at the door, and overthrew his father in his flight. -The old gentleman would not fpend time in getting up, but crawled backwards like a crab, with great speed, till he had got over the threshold, mumbling exorcisms all the way. - I was exceedingly mortified to find myself in danger of perishing through the ignorance and cowardice of these clowns; and felt my spirits decay apace, when an old woman entered the barn, followed by the two fugitives, and with great intrepidity advanced to the place where I lay, faying, "If it be the devil I fearen not, and for a dead mon a can do us no harm."—When the faw B 5 my

my condition, she cried, "Here be no devil, but in " youren fool's head.—Here be a poor miserable wretch, bleeding to death, and if a dies, we must " be at the charge of burying him; therefore, Dick, ee go vetch the old wheel-barrow and puten in, and carry en to good-man Hodge's back-door, he is " more eable than we to lay out money upon poor " vagrants."—Her advice was taken, and immediately put in execution: I was rolled to the other farmer's door, where I was tumbled out like a heap of dung; and would certainly have fallen a prey to the hogs, if my groans had not diffurbed the family, and brought fome of them out to view my fituation. But Hodge refembled the Jew more than the good Samaritan, and ordered me to be carried to the house of the parfon, whose business it was to practise as well as to preach charity: Observing, that it was sufficient for him to pay his quota towards the maintenance of the poor belonging to his own parish. - When I was set down at the vicar's gate, he fell into a mighty paffion, and threatened to excommunicate him who fent, as well as those who brought me, unless they would move me immediately to another place. - About this time I fainted with the fatigue I had undergone, and afterwards understood that I was bandied from door to door through a whole village, nobody having humanity enough to administer the least relief to me, until an old woman, who was suspected of witchcraft by the neighbourhood, hearing of my diffress, received me into her house, and having dressed my wounds, brought me to myself with cordials of her own preparing.-I was treated with great care and tenderness by this grave matron, who, after I had recovered some strength, defired to know the particulars of my last disaster. - This piece of fatisfaction I could not refuse to one who had faved my life; therefore related all my adventures without exaggeration or referve.

in ble ult k. nd is or V r's ht ge п, irto or he fet n, as ıld nis nd or une, aft -5ny er nđ ad tiıI e-Or

reserve. - She seemed surprized at the vicissitudes I had undergone, and drew a happy prefage of my future life from my past sufferings, then launched out into the praife of adverfity with fo much ardour and good fense, that I concluded she was a person who had seen better days, and conceived a longing defire to hear her story.—She perceived my drift by some words I dropped, and fmiling, told me, there was nothing either entertaining or extraordinary in the course of her fortune; but however, she would communicate it to me, in confideration of the confidence I had reposed in her.—" It is of little consequence (said she) " to tell the names of my parents, who are dead "many years ago: Let it suffice to assure you, they " were wealthy, and had no other child than me; " fo that I was looked upon as heirefs to a confi-" derable estate, and teized with addresses on that " account. Among the number of my admirers, "there was a young gentleman of no fortune, whose " fole dependance was on his promotion in the army, " in which at that time he bore a lieutenant's com-" mission.—I conceived an affection for this amiable officer, which in a short time increased to a " violent passion, and, without entering into minute " circumstances, married him privately.—We had " not enjoyed one another long, in stolen inter-"views, when he was ordered with his regiment to "Flanders; but before he fet out, it was agreed " between us, that he should declare our marriage " to my father by letter, and implore his pardon " for the step we had taken without his appro-66 bation,—This discovery was made while I was " abroad vifiting, and just as I was about to return "home, I received a letter from my father, im-" porting, that fince I had acted fo undutifully and " meanly, as to marry a beggar, without his privity " or content, to the difgrace of his family, as well " as the disappointment of his hopes, he renounced B 6

" me to the miserable fate I had entailed upon my-" felf, and charged me never to fet foot within his 66 doors again.—This rigid fentence was confirmed by my mother, who, in a postscript, gave me to " understand, that her sentiments were exactly con-66 formable to those of my father, and that I might fave myfelf the trouble of making any applications, " for her refolutions were unalterable. - Thunder-" ftruck with my evil fortune, I called a coach, and " drove to my husband's lodgings, where I found " him waiting the event of his letter. Though "he could eatily divine by my looks the iffue of his " declaration, he read with great steadiness the epistle "I had received; and with a smile full of tenderness, which I shall never forget, embraced me, faying, . I believe the good lady your mother might have spared herself the trouble of the last part of her postscript. -Well, my dear Betty, you must lay aside all thoughts of a coach, till I can procure the command of a regi-" ment. This unconcerned behaviour, while it " enabled me to support my reverse of fortune, at the " fame time endeared him to me the more, by convincing me or his difinterested views in espousing ee me. __I was next day boarded in company with 66 the wife of another officer, who had long been the friend and confident of my husband, at a village not far from London, where they parted with " us in the most melting manner, went to Flanders, " and were killed in fight of one another at the battle of the Wood .- Why should I tire you with " a description of our unutterable forrow at the fatal " news of this event, the remembrance of which now " fills my aged eyes with tears!-When our grief " fubfided a little, and reflection came to our aid, we found ourselves deserted by the whole world, " and in danger of perishing by want: Whereupon we made application for the pension, and were of put upon the lift. Then vowing eternal friendship,

" fold our jewels and superfluous clothes, retired to "this place (which is in the county of Suffex) " bought this little house, where we lived many " years in a folitary manner, indulging our mutual " forrow, till it pleafed heaven to call away my " companion two years ago, fince which time I have " lingered out an unhappy being, in hopes of a " speedy dissolution, when I promise myself the " eternal reward of all my cares. —In the mean time, " (continued she) I must inform you of the character I bear among the neighbours: - My conversa-"tion being different from that of the inhabitants of "the village, my reclufe way of life, my skill in " curing diftempers, which I acquired from books " fince I fettled here, and laftly, my age, have made " the common people look upon me as fomething " preternatural, and I am actually at this hour be-" lieved to be a witch. The parson of the parish, " whose acquaintance I have not been at much pains " to cultivate, taking umbrage at my supposed dif-" respect, has contributed not a little towards the confirmation of this opinion, by dropping certain " hints to my prejudice, among the vulgar, who are " also very much scandalized at my entertaining this " poor tabby cat with the collar about her neck, which " was a favourite of my deceafed companion."

,

t

e

n

h

,

e

ıl

N

ef

١,

ı,

n

re

),

The whole behaviour of this venerable person was so primitive, innocent, sensible, and humane, that I contracted a filial respect for her, and begged her advice with regard to my future conduct, as soon as I was in a condition to act for myself.—She distuated me from a design I had formed of travelling to London, in hopes of retrieving my clothes and pay, by returning to my ship, which by this time, I read in the news-paper, was safely arrived in the River Thames: "Because (said she) you run the hazard of being treated not only as a deserter, in quitting the sloop, but also as a mutineer in assaulting your command-

ing officer, to the malice of whose revenge you "will moreover be exposed."—She then promised to recommend me as fervant to a fingle lady of her acquaintance, who lived in the neighbourhood with her nephew, who was a young fox-hunter of great fortune, where I might be very happy, provided I could bear the disposition and manners of my mistress, which were somewhat whimsical and particular.—But above all things, the counfelled me to conceal my ftory, the knowledge of which would effectually poison my entertainment; for it was a maxim among most people of condition, that no gentleman in diffress ought to be admitted into a family, as a domestick, left he become proud, lazy, and infolent.—I was fain to embrace this humble propofal, because my affairs were desperate; and in a few days was hired by this lady, to ferve in quality of her footman; having been represented by my hostess as a young man who was bred up to the fea by his relations against his will, and had suffered shipwreck, which had encreased his disgust to that way of life so much, that he rather chose to go to service on shore than enter himself on board of any other ship. - Before I took possession of my new place, the gave me a sketch of my mistress's character, that I might know better how to regulate my conduct. "Your lady " (said she) is a maiden of forty years, not so re-" markable for her beauty as her learning and tafte, " which is famous all over the country. - Indeed the " is a perfect female virtuofo, and so eager after the " pursuit of knowledge, that she neglects her person even to a degree of fluttishness; this negligence, " together with her contempt of the male part of the " creation, gives her nephew no great concern, as " by these means, he will probably keep her fortune, " which is confiderable, in the family. He there-66 fore permits her to live in her own way, which is " fomething extraordinary, and gratifies her in all. 66 her

UC

to

C-

th

eat

I

ny

ti-

to

ald

a

en-

ly,

in-

fal,

ays

ot-

s a

ela-

ck,

10

ore

Be-

now

lady

re-

afte,

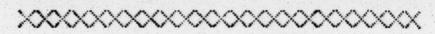
the rion ence,

une, nere-

n all.

the !

" her whimfical defires. Her apartment is at some "diffance from the other inhabited parts of the " house; and confists of a dining-room, bed chamber, and study: She keeps a cook-maid, waitingwoman, and footman of her own, and feldom eats " or converses with any of the family but her niece, " who is a very lovely creature, and humours her " aunt often to the prejudice of her own health, by " fitting up with her whole nights together; for your " mistress is too much of a philosopher to be swayed " by the customs of the world, and never sleeps or " eats like other people.—Among other odd notions, " fhe professes the principles of Rosicrucius, and be-" lieves the earth, air, and fea, are inhabited by invisible beings, with whom it is possible for the "human species to entertain correspondence and in-"timacy on the eafy condition of living chafte.—As " The hopes one day to be admitted into an acquaint-" ance of this kind, the no fooner heard of me and " my cat, than the paid me a vifit, with a view, as " fhe has fince owned, to be introduced to my fa-" miliar; and was greatly mortified to find herfelf " disappointed in her expectation. Being, by this " visionary turn of mind, abstracted as it were from " the world, she cannot advert to the common occur-" rences of life; and therefore is frequently fo absent " as to commit very strange mistakes and extrava-" gancies, which you will do well to rectify and re-" pair, as your prudence shall suggest."



C H A P. XXXIX.

My reception by that lady—I become enamoured of Narcissa—recount the particulars of my last missortune—acquire the good opinion of my mistress—an account of the young squire—I am made acquainted with more particulars of Narcissa's situation—conceive a mortal hatred against Sir Timothy—examine my lady's library and performances—her extravagant behaviour.

RAUGHT with these useful instructions, I repaired to the place of her habitation, and was introduced by the waiting-woman to the presence of my lady, who had not before feen me. - She fat in her study, with one foot on the ground, and the other upon a high stool at some distance from her feat; her fandy locks hung down in a diforder I cannot call beautiful, from her head, which was deprived of its coif, for the benefit of scratching with one hand, while she held the stump of a pen in the other. - Her forehead was high and wrinkled, her eyes were large, grey, and prominent; her nose was long, sharp, and aquiline; her mouth of vast capacity; her visage meagre and freckled, and her chin peeked like a shoemaker's paring knife; her upper lip contained a large quantity of plain Spanish, which, by continual falling, had embroidered her neck that was not naturally very white, and the breast of her gown, that slowed loose about her with a negligence truly poetic, discovering linen that was very fine, and, to all appearance, never washed but in Castalian streams. - Around her lay heaps of books, globes, quadrants, telescopes, and other other learned apparatus: Her snuff-box stood at her right hand, at her lest hand lay her handkerchief sufficiently used, and a convenience to spit in, appeared on one side of her chair.—She being in a reverie when we entered, the maid did not think proper to disturb her; so that we waited some minutes unobserved, during which time, she bit the quill several times, altered her position, made many wry faces, and at length, with an air of triumph, repeated aloud:

of

ıst.

ny

irs

tal my

a-

re-

was

ot

in

the

her

an-

ved

ind,

Her

rge,

and

lage

noe-

arge

ling,

very

loole

ering

ince,

r lay

and

other

"Nor dare th' immortal Gods my rage oppose!"

Having committed her fuccess to paper, she turned towards the door, and perceiving us, cried, "What's "the matter?"-" Here's the young man (replied " my conductress) whom Mrs. Sagely recommended " as a footman to your ladyship." On this information she stared in my face a considerable time, and then asked my name, which I thought proper to conceal under that of John Brown.-After having furveyed me with a curious eye, she broke out into "O! ay, thou wast shipwrecked I remember.-"Whether didst thou come on shore on the back of " a whale or a dolphin?"—To this I answered, I had fwam ashore without any affistance.—Then she demanded to know if I had ever been at the Hellespont, and fwam from Sestos to Abydos. I replied in the negative: Upon which, she bade the maid order a fuit of new livery for me, and instruct me in the articles of my duty; fo faying, she spit in her fnuff-box, and wiped her nose with her cap, which lay on the table, instead of a handkerchief. We returned to the kitchen, where I was regaled by the maids, who seemed to vie with each other, in expressing their regard for me; and from them I understood that my business consisted in cleaning knives and forks, laying the cloth, waiting at table, carrying messages, and attending my lady when she went abroad.

abroad. There was a very good fuit of livery in the house, which had belonged to my predecessor deceased, and it fitted me exactly; fo that there was no occasion for employing a tailor on my account.-I had not long been equipped in this manner, when my lady's bell rung; upon which, I ran up stairs, and found her stalking about the room in her shift and under-petticoat only: I would have immediately retired as became me, but she bid me come in, and air a clean shift for her; which operation I having performed with some backwardness, she put it on before me without any ceremony, and I verily believe was ignorant of my fex all that time, as being quite absorpt in contemplation. - About four o'clock in the afternoon, I was ordered to lay the cloth, and place two covers, which I understood were for my mistress and her niece, whom I had not as yet feen .- I hough I was not very dexterous at this work, I performed it pretty well for a beginner; and when dinner was upon the table, faw my mistress approach, accompanied by the young lady, whose name for the prefent shall be Narcissa.—So much sweetness appeared in the countenance and carriage of this amiable apparition, that my heart was captivated at first fight, and while dinner lasted, I gazed upon her without intermission.—Her age seemed to be seventeen, her stature tall, her shape unexceptionable, her hair, that fell down upon her ivory neck in ringlets, black as jet; her arched eye-brows of the same colour; her eyes piercing, yet tender; her lips of the confistence and hue of cherries; her complexion clear, delicate, and healthy; her aspect noble, ingenuous, and humane; and the whole person so ravishingly delightful, that it was impossible for any creature, endued with fenfibility, to fee without admiring, and admire without loving her to excess! I began to curse the fervile station that placed me fo far beneath the regard of this idol of my adoration ! and yet I bleffed my fate, te

1-

10

-[

en

S.

ift

ly

nd

ng

e-

ve

ite

he

ce

es

gh

it

vas

m-

re-

red

ap-

ht,

out

her

air,

ack

her

nce

ate,

hu-

tht-

ued

nire

the

gard

ate,

that

that enabled me to enjoy daily the fight of fo much perfection! When the spoke, I listened with pleasure; but when the spoke to me, my foul was thrilled with an extafy of tumultuous joy! I was even to happy as to be the subject of their conversation: For Narcisla having observed me, faid to her aunt, "I see your " new footman is come." Then addressing herself to me, asked, with ineffable complacency, if I was the person who had been so cruelly used by robbers? When I fatisfied her in this, the expressed a defire of knowing the other particulars of my fortune both before and fince my being shipwrecked: Hereupon (as Mrs. Sagely had counfelled me) I told her that I had been bound apprentice to the mafter of a ship, contrary to my inclination, which thip had foundered at fea;—that I and four more, who chanced to be on deck when she went down, made shift to swim to the shore, when my companions, after having overpowered me, ftript me to the shirt, and left me, as they imagined, dead of the wounds I received in my own defence. Then I related the circumstances of my being found in a barn, with the inhuman treatment I met with from the country people and parfon; the description of which, I perceived, drew tears from the charming creature's eyes !-When I had finished my recital, my mistress said, " Ma foy! le garçon est bien fait!" To which opinion Narcissa assented, with a compliment to my understanding in the same language, that flattered my vanity extremely.

The conversation, among other subjects, turned upon the young squire, whom my lady enquired after, under the title of the Savage; and was informed by her niece, that he was still in bed, repairing the fatigue of last night's debauch, and recruiting strength and spirits to undergo a fox chace to-morrow morning, in company with Sir Timothy Thicket, Squire Bumper, and a great many other gentlemen of the same stamp, whom he had invited on that occasion;

fo that by day-break, the whole house would be in an uproar.—This was a very disagreeable piece of news to the Virtuoso, who protested she would stuff her ears with cotton when she went to bed, and take a dose of opium to make her sleep the more sound, that she might not be disturbed and distracted by the clamour of the brutes.

When their dinner was over, I and my fellowfervants fet down to ours in the kitchen, where I understood that Sir Timothy Thicket was a wealthy knight in the neighbourhood, between whom and Narcissa a match had been projected by her brother, who promised at the same time to espouse Sir Timo-. thy's fifter; by which means, as their fortunes were pretty equal, the young ladies would be provided for, and their brothers be never the poorer; but that the ladies did not concur in the scheme, each of them entertaining a hearty contempt for the person allotted to her for a husband, by this agreement.—This information begat in me a mortal aversion to Sir Timothy, whom I looked upon as my rival, and curfed in my heart for his prefumption.—Next morning by day-break being awaked by the noise of the hunters and hounds, I rose to view the cavalcade, and had a fight of my competitor, whose accomplishments (the estate excluded) did not seem brilliant enough to give me much uneafiness with respect to Narcissa, who, I flattered myfelf, was not to be won by fuch qualifications as he was mafter of, either as to person or mind.—My mistress, notwithstanding her precaution, was fo much diffurbed by her nephew's company, that she did not rise till five o'clock in the afternoon: So that I had an opportunity of examining her study at leifure, to which examination I was frongly prompted by my curiofity.—Here I found a thousand icraps of her own poetry, confisting of three, four, ten, twelve, and twenty lines, on an infinity of fubin vs

rs

(e

ne

ur

V-

1-

ny

br

r,

0- .

re

r,

he

m

ed

n-

0-

in

by

ers

la

he

ve

10,

1

or

n,

ly,

n:

dy

gly

nd

ur,

ıb-

As,

jects, which, as whim inspired, she had begun, without constancy or capacity to bring to any degree of composition: But what was very extraordinary in a female poet, there was not the least mention made of love in any of her performances. I counted fragments of five tragedies, the titles of which were, " The Stern Philosopher .- The Double Murder .-"The Sacrilegious Traitor.—The Fall of Lucifer; " - and The Last Day." From whence I gathered that her disposition was gloomy, and her imagination delighted with objects of horror .- Her library was - composed of the best English historians, poets, and philosophers; of all the French critics and poets, and of a few books in Italian, chiefly poetry, at the head of which were Taffo and Ariosto, pretty much used. Besides these, translations of the classicks into French, but not one book in Greek or Latin; a circumstance that discovered her ignorance in these languages. - After having taken a full view of this collection, I retired, and at the usual time was preparing to lay the cloth, when I was told by the maid that her mistress was still in bed, and had been so affected with the notes of the hounds in the morning, that she actually believed herself a hare beset by the hunters; and begged a few greens to munch for breakfast.—When I expressed my surprize at this unaccountable imagination, the gave me to understand, that her lady was very much subject to whims of this nature; fometimes fancying herfelf an animal, fometimes a piece of furniture, during which conceited transformations, it was very dangerous to come near her, especially when she represented a beast; for that lately, in the character of a cat, she had flown at her and icratched her face in a terrible manner; that some months ago, she prophesied the general conflagration was at hand, and nothing would be able to quench it but her water, which therefore she kept so long that her life was in danger; and she must needs have died of the retention, had they not found an expedient to make her evacuate, by kindling a bonfire under her chamber window, and perfuading her that the house was in flames; upon which, with great deliberation, she bade them bring all the tubs and veffels they could find, to be filled, for the preservation of the house, into one of which the immediately discharged the caute of her distemper. - I was also informed, that nothing contributed so much to the recovery of her reason, as musick, which was always administered on those occasions by Narciffa, who played perfectly well on the harpfichord, and to whom she (the maid) was just then going to intimate her aunt's disorder. --- She was no sooner gone, than I was fummoned by the bell to my lady's chamber, where I found her fitting squat on her hams, on the floor, in the manner of puss when she listens to the outcries of her pursuers.-When I appeared, she started up with an alarmed look, and fprung to the other fide of the room to avoid me, whom, without doubt, she mistook for a beagle thirsting after her life. - Perceiving her extreme confufion, I retired, and on the stair-case met the adorable Narcissa coming up, to whom I imparted the situation of my mistres: She said not a word, but smiling with unspeakable grace, went into her aunt's apartment, and in a little time my ears were ravished with the effects of her skill. - She accompanied the inftrument with a voice fo fweet and melodious, that I did not wonder at the furprizing change it produced on the spirits of my mistress, which were soon composed to peace and sober reflection.

About seven o'clock the hunters arrived, with the skins of two foxes and one badger, carried before them as trophies of their success: And when they were about to sit down to dinner (or supper) Sir Timothy Thicket desired that Narcissa would honour the table with her presence: But this request, notwith-

flanding her brother's threats and intreaties, she refused, on pretence of attending her aunt, who was indisposed; so I enjoyed the satisfaction of seeing my rival mortified: But this disappointment made no great impression on him, who consoled himself with the bottle, of which the whole company became fo enamoured, that after a most horrid uproar of laughing, finging, fwearing, dancing, and fighting, they were all carried to bed in a state of utter oblivion .-My duty being altogether detached from the Squire and his family, I led a pretty easy and comfortable life, drinking daily intoxicating draughts of love from the charms of Narcissa, which brightened on my contemplation every day more and more.-Inglorious as my station was, I became blind to my own unworthiness, and even conceived hopes of one day enjoying this amiable creature, whose affability greatly encouraged these presumptuous thoughts.



CHAP. XL.

My mistress is surprized at my learning—communicates ber performances to me—I impart some of mine to ber—am mortisted at ber faint praise—Narcissa approves of my condust— I gain an involuntary conquest over the cookwench and dairy-maid—their mutual resentment and insinuations—the jealousy of their lovers.

DURING this feason of love and tranquillity, my muse, which had lain dormant so long, awoke, and produced several small performances on the subject of my slame: But as it concerned me nearly

nearly to remain undiscovered in my real character and fentiments, I was under a necessity of mortifying my defire of praise, by confining my works to my own perusal and applause. - In the mean time I strove to infinuate myself into the good opinion of both ladies; and succeeded so well, by my diligence and dutiful behaviour, that in a little time, I was at least a favourite servant; and frequently enjoyed the pleasure of hearing myself mentioned in French and Italian, with some degree of warmth and surprize, by the dear object of all my wishes, as a person who had fo much of the gentleman in my appearance and discourse, that she could not for her soul treat me like a common lacquey. My prudence and modefty were not long proof against these bewitching compliments. One day, while I waited at dinner, the conversation turned upon a knotty passage of Taffo's Gierusalem, which, it seems, had puzzled them both: After a great many unfatisfactory conjectures, my mistress taking the book out of her pocket, turned up the place in question, and read the fentence over and over without fuccess; at length, despairing of finding the author's meaning, she turned to me, faying, "Come hither, Bruno, let us fee what fortune will do for us; I will interpret to thee " what goes before and what follows this obscure pa-" ragraph, the particular words of which I will also explain, that thou mayeft, by comparing one with another, guess the sense of that which perplexes us."-I was too vain to let flip this opportunity of displaying my talents, therefore, without hesitation, read and explained the whole of that which had difconcerted them, to the utter aftonishment of both. Narcissa's face and lovely neck were overspread with blushes, from which I drew a favourable omen, while her aunt, after having stared at me a good while with a look of amazement, exclaimed, " In the name of "heaven! Who art thou?"-I told her I had picked

up a smattering of Italian, during a voyage up the Straits. At this explanation she shook her head, and observed, that no smatterer could read as I had done.—She then defired to know if I understood French? To which question I answered in the affirmative: She asked, if I was acquainted with the Latin and Greek? I replied, "A little."-" Oho! (con-" tinued she) and with philosophy and mathematics, " I suppose?"-I owned, I knew something of each. Then the repeated her stare and interrogation. - I began to repent of my vanity, and in order to repair the fault I had committed, faid, it was not to be wondered at if I had a tolerable education, for learning was fo cheap in my country, that every peafant was a scholar; but I hoped her ladyship would think my understanding no exception to my character. She was pleafed to answer, "No, no, God forbid." But during the rest of the time they sat at table, they behaved with remarkable referve.

This alteration gave me great uneafiness; and I passed the night without sleep, in melancholy reflections on the vanity of young men, which prompts them to commit fo many foolish actions, contrary to their own fober judgment.-Next day, however, inflead of profiting by this felf-condemnation, I yielded still more to the dictates of the principle I had endeavoured to chastise, and if fortune had not befriended me more than prudence could expect, I should have been treated with the contempt it deferved .- After breakfast, my lady, who was a true author, bade me follow her into the study, where she expressed herself thus: "Since you are so learned, " you cannot be void of taste; therefore I am to " desire your opinion of a small performance in " poetry, which I lately composed.—You must know "I have planned a tragedy, the subject of which " shall be the murder of a prince before the altar, VOL. II.

- "where he is bufy at his devotions.—After the deed is perpetrated, the regicide will harangue the people with the bloody dagger in his hand; and I have already composed a speech, which I think will suit the character extremely.—Here it is."—Then taking up a scrap of paper, she read with violent emphasis and gesture, as follows:
- Thus have I fent the simple king to hell,
 Without or coffin, shroud, or passing bell:
 To me, what are divine and human laws?
- "I court no fanction but my own applause!
 Rapes, robb'ries, treasons, yield my soul delight;
- " And human carnage gratifies my fight:
- "I drag the parent by the hoary hair,
 "And tofs the sprawling infant on my spear,
- While the fond mother's cries regale mine ear.
- " I fight, I vanquish, murder friends and foes;
 "Nor dare th' immortal Gods my rage oppose."

Though I did great violence to my understanding in praising this unnatural rhapsedy, I nevertheless extolled it as a production that of itself deserved immortal fame; and befought her ladyfhip to blefs the world with the fruits of those uncommon talents heaven had bestowed upon her -She smiled with a look of felf-complacency, and encouraged by the incense I had offered, communicated all her poetical works, which I applauded one by one, with as little candour as I had shewn at first. - Satiated with my flattery, which, I hope, my situation justified, she could not in conscience refuse me an opportunity of shining in my turn; and therefore, after a compliment to my nice discernment and taste, observed, that doubtless I must have produced something in that way myself, which she defired to see. - This was a temptation I could by no means refift. — I owned that while I was at college, I wrote some small detached

tached pieces, at the desire of a friend who was in love; and at her request repeated the following verses, which indeed my love for Narcissa had inspired.

On Celia playing on the barpfichord and finging.

I.

When Sappho struck the quiv'ring wire, The throbbing breast was all on fire: And when she rais'd the vocal lay, The captive soul was charm'd away!

II.

But had the nymph, possess with these, Thy softer, chaster pow'r to please; Thy beauteous air of sprightly youth, Thy native smiles of artless truth;

III.

The worm of grief had never prey'd On the forfaken, love-fick maid:
Nor had she mourn'd an haples flame,
Nor dash'd on rocks her tender frame.

My mistress paid me a cold compliment on my versification, which, she said, was elegant enough, but the subject beneath the pen of a true poet. I was extremely nettled at her indifference, and looked at Narcissa, who by this time had joined us, for her approbation, but she declined giving her opinion, protesting she was no judge of these matters: So that I was forced to retire, very much baulked in my expectation, which was generally a little too sanguine. In the afternoon, however, the waiting-maid assured me, that Narcissa had expressed her approbation of my performance with great warmth, and desired her to procure a copy of it, as for herself, that she (Narcissa) might have an opportunity to peruse it at pleasure.—I was elated to an extravagant pitch at this intelligence, and immediately transcribed a fair copy of my Ode, which was carried to the dear charmer, together with another on the same subject, as follows:

I.

Thy fatal shafts unerring move, I bow before thine altar, Love! I feel thy foft, refistless slame Glide swift through all my vital frame!

II.

For while I gaze, my bosom glows, My blood in tides impetuous flows, Hope, fear, and joy alternate roll, And floods of transports 'whelm my soul!

III.

My fault'ring tongue attempts in vain, In foothing murmurs to complain, My tongue fome fecret magic ties, My murmurs fink in broken fighs!

IV.

Condemn'd to nurse eternal care, And ever drop the filent tear, Unheard I mourn, unknown I figh, Unfriended live, unpity'd die!

Whether or not Narcissa discovered my passion, I could not learn from her behaviour, which, though always benevolent to me, was henceforth more referved and less chearful.—While my thoughts aspired

to a sphere so far above me, I had unwittingly made a conquest of the cook-wench and dairy-maid, who became so jealous of each other, that if their fentiments had been refined by education, it is probable one or other of them would have had recourse to poison or steel, to be avenged of her rival; but as their minds were happily adapted to their humble flation, their mutual enmity was confined to fcolding and fifty-cuffs, in which exercises they were both well fkilled.-My good fortune did not long remain a secret; for it was disclosed by the frequent broils of these heroines, who kept no decorum in their encounters. The coachman and gardener, who paid their devoirs to my admirers, each to his respective choice, alarmed at my fuccess, laid their heads together, in order to concert a plan of revenge; and the former having been educated at the academy of Tottenham-court, undertook to challenge me to fingle He accordingly, with many opprobrious invectives, bade me defiance, and offered to box me for twenty guineas.—I told him, that although I believed myself a match for him, even at that work, I would not descend so far below the dignity of a gentleman as to fight like a porter; but if he had any thing to fay to me, I was his man at blunderbus, musket, pistol, sword, hatchet, spit, cleaver, fork, or needle; nay, I swore, that should he give his tongue any more faucy liberties at my expence, L would crop his ears without any ceremony. - This rhodomantade, delivered with a stern countenance. and resolute tone, had the defired effect upon my antagonist, who with some confusion, sneaked off, and gave his friend an account of his reception. The story taking air among the fervants, procured for me the title of Gentleman John, with which I was fometimes honoured, even by my mistress and Narcissa, who had been informed of the whole affair by the chamber-maid.—In the mean time, the rival queens C 3 expressed

expressed their passion by all the ways in their power: The cook entertained me with choice bits, the dairymaid with stroakings; the first would often encourage me to discover myself by complimenting me upon my courage and learning, and observing, that if she had a husband like me to maintain order and keep accompts, she could make a great deal of money by fetting up an eating house at London, for gentlemen's fervants on board wages. - The other courted my affection, by shewing her own importance, and telling me, that many a substantial farmer in the neighbourhood would be glad to marry her; but she was resolved to please her eye, if she should plague her heart .-Then she would launch out into the praise of my proper person, and say, she was sure I would make a good husband, for I was very good-natured. - I began to be uneasy at the importunities of those inamoratas. whom at another time, perhaps, I might have pleafed without the difagreeable fauce of matrimony; but at present, my whole soul was engrossed by Narcissa, and I could not bear the thoughts of doing any thing derogatory of the passion I entertained for her-

CHAP. XLI.

Narcissa being in danger from the brutality of Sir Timothy, is rescued by me, who revenge myself on my rival—I declare my passion, and retreat to the sea-side—am surrounded by smugglers, and carried to Bulloign——find my uncle lieutenant Bowling, in great distress, and relieve bim—our conversation.

A T certain intervals, my ambition would revive; I would despise myself for my tame resignation to my sordid sate, and revolve an hundred schemes for assuming the character of a gentleman, to which I thought myself intitled by birth and education—In these fruitless suggestions time stole away unperceived, and I had already remained eight months in the station of a sootman, when an accident happened, that put an end to my servitude, and for the present banished all hopes of succeeding in my love.

Narcissa went one day to visit Miss Thicket, who lived with her brother within less than a mile of our house, and was persuaded to walk home in the cool of the evening, accompanied by Sir Timothy, who, having a good deal of the brute in him, was instigated to use some unbecoming familiarities with her, encouraged by the solitariness of a field through which they passed.—The lovely creature was incensed at his rude behaviour, for which she reproached him in such a manner, that he lost all regard to decency, and actually offered violence to this pattern of innocence and beauty.—But heaven would not suffer so much goodness to be violated; and sent me, who passing

passing by accident near the place, was alarmed with her cries, to her fuccour .- What were the emotions of my foul when I beheld Narcissa, almost finking beneath the brutal force of this fatyr! I flew like lightning to her rescue, and he perceiving me, quitted his prey, and drew his hanger to chattife my prefumption.-My indignation was too high to admit one thought of fear, to that rushing upon him, I flruck his weapon out of his hand, and used my cudget to fucceisfully, that he fell to the ground, and lay, to all appearance, without fense. - Then I turned to Narcissa, who had swooned, and sitting down by her, gently raifed her head, and supported it on my bosom, while, with my hand around her waist, I kept her in that position. My foul was thrilled with tumultuous joy, at feeling the object of my dearest wishes within my arms; and while she lay infensible, I could not refrain from applying my cheek to her's and ravishing a kiss: In a little time, the blood began to revilit her face, she opened her enchanting eyes, and having recollected her late fituation, faid, with a look full of tender acknowledgment, "Dear John, "I am eternally obliged to you!" So faying, she made an effort to rife, in which I affisted her, and fhe proceeded to the house, leaning upon me all the way. I was a thousand times tempted by this opportunity to declare my passion, but the dread of difoblining her, restrained my tongue. We had not moved an hundred paces from the scene of her distress, when I perceived Sir Timothy rife and walk homeward; a circumstance, which, though it gave me fome fatisfaction, in as much as I thereby knew I had not killed him, filled me with just apprehension of his referement, which I found myfelf in no condition to withstand; especially when I considered his intimacy with our fquire, to whom I knew he could justify himself for what he had done, by imputing it to his love, and defiring his brother Bruin to take

the same liberty with his fifter, without any fear of offence. - When we arrived at the house, Narcissa affured me, she would exert all her influence in protecting me from the revenge of Thicket, and likewife engage her aunt in my favour. At the fame time, pulling out her purse, offered it as a small confideration for the fervice I had done her. - But I flood too much upon the punctilios of love to incurthe least suspicion of being mercenary, and refused the present, by saying, I had merited nothing by barely doing my duty. --- She seemed astonished at my difinterestedness, and blushed; I felt the same fuffusion, and with a down-cast eye, and broken accent, told her, I had one request to make, which, if her generofity would grant, I should think myself fully recompensed for an age of misery.—She changed colour at this preamble, and, with great confusion, replied, the hoped my good fense would hinder me from asking any thing she was bound in honour to refuse, and therefore bade me fignify my defire. Upon which I kneeled, and begged to kifs her hand. She immediately, with an averted look, stretched it out; I imprinted on it an ardent kifs, and bathing it with my tears, cried, "Dear Madam, I am an " unfortunate gentleman, and love you to distraction, but would have died a thousand deaths rather than. " make this declaration under fuch a fervile appear-" ance, were I not determined to yield to the rigour " of my fate, to fly from your bewitching presence, " and bury my presumptuous passion in eternal " filence." With these words I rose and went away, before the could recover her spirits so far as to make any reply.—My first care was to go and consult Mrs. Sagely, with whom I had maintained a friendly correspondence ever fince I lest her house. When she understood my situation, the good woman, with real concern, condoled me on my unhappy fate, and approved of my resolution to leave the country,

country, as being perfectly well acquainted with the barbarous disposition of my rival, " who, by this 46 time (said she) has no doubt meditated a scheme of revenge.—Indeed, I cannot fee how you will 66 be able to elude his vengeance; being himfelf in "the commission, he will immediately grant warc rants for apprehending you; and as almost all the ec people in this country are dependent on him or his " friend, it will be impossible for you to find shelter among them: If you should be apprehended, he " will commit you to jail, where you may possibly " languish in great misery till the next assizes, and "then be transported for affaulting a magistrate."-While she thus warned me of my danger, we heard a knocking at the door, which threw us both into great confternation, as, in all probability, it was occasioned by my pursuers; whereupon this generous old lady putting two guineas into my hand, with tears in her eyes, bade me, for God's fake, get out at the back door, and confult my fafety as providence should direct me .- There was no time for deliberation.—I followed her advice, and escaped by the benefit of a dark night, to the fea-fide, where, while I ruminated on my next excursion, I was all of a fudden furrounded by armed men, who, having bound my hands and feet, bade me make no noise on pain of being thot, and carried me on board of a veffel, which I foon perceived to be a fmuggling cutter.—This discovery gave me some satisfaction at first, because I concluded myself safe from the resentment of Sir Timothy: But when I found myfelf in the hands of ruffians, who threatened to execute me for a fpy, I would have thought myfelf happily quit for a year's imprisonment, or even transportation. - It was in vain for me to protest my innocence: I could not perfuade them that I had taken a folitary walk to their haunt, at fuch an hour, merely for my own amusement; and I did not think it my interest to disclose the the true cause of my retreat, because I was afraid they would have made their peace with justice by furrendering me to the penalty of the law .- What confirmed their suspicion was, the appearance of a custom-house yacht, which gave them chace, and had well nigh made a prize of their veffel; when they were delivered from their fears by a thick fog, which effectually screened them, and favoured their arrival at Bulloign. - But before they got out of fight of their pursuer, they held a council of war about me, and fome of the most ferocious among them, would have thrown me overboard as a traitor who had betrayed them to their enemies; but others more confiderate, alleged, that if they put me to death, and should afterwards be taken, they could expect no mercy from the legislature, which would never pardon outlawry aggravated by murder.—It was therefore determined by a plurality of votes, that I should be set on shore in France, and left to find my passage back to England as I should think proper, this being punishment sufficient for the bare suspicion of a crime in itself not capital.—Although this favourable determination gave me great pleafure, the apprehension of being robbed would not suffer me to be perfectly at eafe: To prevent this calamity, as forn as I was untied, in consequence of the foresaid decision, I tore a finall hole in one of my flockings, into which I dropped fix guineas, referving half a piece and fome filver in my pocket, that finding fomething, they might not be tempted to make any further inquiry. This was a very necessary precaution, for when we came within fight of the French shore, one of the fmugglers told me, I must pay for my passage.—To this declaration I replied, that my passage was none of my own feeking; therefore they could not expect a reward from me for transporting me into a strange country by force.—" Damme! (faid the outlaw) none of your palaver; but let me fee what money "you have got."—So faying, he thrust his hand into my pocket without any ceremony, and emptied it of the contents: Then casting an eye at my hat and wig, which captivated his fancy, he took them off, and clapping his own on my head, declared, that a fair exchange was no robbery.—I was fain to put up with the bargain, which was by no means favourable to me; and a little while after we went all

on shore together.

I resolved to take my leave of these desperadoes, without much ceremony, when one of them cautioned me against appearing to their prejudice if ever I returned into England, unless I had a mind to be murdered; for which service, he assured me, the gang never wanted agents .- I promifed to observe his advice, and departed for the Upper Town, where I enquired for a cabaret or public-house, into which I went, with an intention of taking some refreshment. -In the kitchen, five Dutch failors fat at breakfalt, with a large loaf, a firkin of butter, and a cag of brandy, the bung of which they often applied to their mouths with great perfeverance and fatisfaction. - At fome distance from them I perceived another person in the same garb, fitting in a pensive solitary manner, entertaining himfelf with a whiff of tobacco, from the stump of a pipe, as black as jet .- The appearance of diffress never failed to attract my regard and compaffion; I approached this forlorn tar with a view to offer him my affiftance, and notwithstanding the alteration of dress, and disguise of a long beard, I discovered in him my long loft and lamented uncle and benefactor lieutenant Bowling! Good heaven! what were the agitations of my foul, between the joy of finding again such a valuable friend, and the forrow of feeing him in fuch a low condition! The tears gushed down my cheeks, I stood motionless and silent for some time; at length, recovering the use of speech, exclaimed, "Gracious God! Mr. Bowling!"-My uncle

uncle no fooner heard his name mentioned, than he started up, crying with some surprise, "Holloa!" and after having looked at me ftedfaftly, without being able to recollect me, faid, "Did you call me, " brother?" I told him I had fomething extraordinary to communicate, and defired him to give me the hearing for a few minutes in another room; but he would by no means confent to this proposal, faving, " Avast there, friend; none of your tricks " upon travellers; --- if you have any thing to fay " to me, do it above board; —you need not be afraid of being overheard;—here are none who understand our lingo." — Though I was loth to discover myself before company, I could no longer refrain from telling him, I was his own nephew Roderick Random. On this information, he confidered me with great earnestness and astonishment, and recalling my features, which though enlarged, were not entirely altered fince he had feen me, came up and shook me by the hand very cordially, protesting he was glad to fee me well. After some pause, he went on thus: " And yet, my lad, I am forry to fee you " under fuch colours; the more fo, as it is not in " my power, at present, to change them for the 66 better, times being very hard with me." With these words I could perceive a tear trickle down his furrowed cheeks, which affected me fo much, that I wept bitterly. Imagining my forrow was the effect of my own misfortunes, he comforted me, with observing, that life was a voyage in which we must expect to meet with all weathers; fometimes it was calm, fometimes rough; that a fair gale often fucceeded a fform; that the wind did not always fit one way, and that despair fignified nothing; but resolution and skill were better than a stout vessel: for why? because they require no carpenter, and grow stronger the more labour they undergo. I dried up my tears, which I affured him were not shed for

I

d

n

c

t

2

ce fo

for my own diffress, but for his, and begged leave to accompany him into another room, where we could converie more at our ease. - There I recounted to him the ungenerous usage I had met with from Potion: at which relation he started up, stalked across the room three or four times, in a great hurry, and grasping his cudgel, cried, "I would I were " along-fide of him-that's all-I would I were " along-fide of him!"-I then gave him a detail of all my adventures and fufferings, which affected him more than I could have imagined; and concluded with telling him that Captain Oakhum was still alive. and that he might return to England when he would to folicit his affairs, without danger or molestation. -He was wonderfully pleafed with this piece of information, of which however he faid, he could not at present avail himself, for want of money to pay for his passage to London. This objection I soon removed, by putting five guineas into his hand, and telling him, I thought myfelf extremely happy in having an opportunity of manifesting my gratitude to him in his necessity .- But it was with the utmost difficulty I could prevail upon him to accept of two, which he affirmed were more than fufficient to defray the necessary expence. - After this friendly contest was over, he proposed we should have a mess of something: " For (faid he) it has been banyan day with " me a great while.-You must know I was ship-" wrecked five days ago, near a place called Lifieux, " in company with those Dutchmen who are now " drinking below; and having but little money when "I came ashore, it was soon spent, because I let them " have there and there while it lasted. - Howsomever, "I should have remembered the old saying, Every " hog his own apple: For when they found my hold " unflowed, they went all hands to shooling and beg-"ging, and because I would not take a spell at the " same duty, refused to give me the least assistance; of that I have not broke bread these two days."-I was shocked at the extremity of his diffress, and ordered fome bread, cheefe, and wine to be brought immediately, to allay his hunger, until a fricassee of chickens could be prepared. When he had recruited his spirits with this homely fare, I defired to know the particulars of his peregrination, fince the accident at Cape Tiberoon; which were briefly these: The money he had about him being all fpent at Port Louis. the civility and hospitality of the French cooled to fuch a degree, that he was obliged to lift on board of one of their king's ships as a common foremast-man. to prevent himself from starving on shore. In this fituation he continued two years, during which time he had acquired some knowledge of their language, and the reputation of a good feaman: The ship he belonged to was ordered home to France, where she was laid up, as unfit for fervice, and he was received on board of one of Monsieur D'Antin's squadron, in quality of quarter-mafter; which office he performed in a voyage to the West-Indies, where they engaged with our ship, as before related; but his conscience upbraiding him for ferving the enemies of his country, he quitted the ship at the same place where he first listed, and got to Curasoa in a Dutch vessel; there he bargained with a skipper bound to Europe. to work for his passage to Holland, from whence he was in hopes of hearing from his friends in England; but was cast away, as he mentioned before, on the French coast, and must have been reduced to the necessity of travelling on foot to Holland, and begging for his subsistence on the road, or of entering on board of another French man of war, at the hazard of being treated as a deferter, if providence had not fent me to his succour. -- " And now, my lad, " (continued he) I think I shall steer my course di-" rectly to London, where I do not doubt of being " replaced, and of having the R taken off me by the " Lords of the Admiralty, to whom I intend to write 44 a petition, fetting forth my case: If I succeed, I " shall have wherewithal to give you some assistance, because, when I left the ship, I had two years pay due to me; therefore I defire to know whither you " are bound; and besides, perhaps, I may have interest enough to procure a warrant appointing you " furgeon's mate of the ship to which I shall belong, -- For the beadle of the admiralty is my good " friend; and he and one of the under-clerks are " fworn brothers, and that under-clerk has a good "deal to fay with one of the upper-clerks, who is e very well known to the under-fecretary, who, upon 44 his recommendation, I hope will recommend my. " affair to the first secretary; and he again, will " speak to one of the lords in my behalf: So that " you see I do not want friends to assist me on occa-" fion-As for the fellow, Crampley, tho'f I know " him not, I am fure he is neither feaman, nor officer, by what you have told me, or else he could " never be fo much miftaken in his reckoning, as to-" run the ship on shore on the coast of Sussex, before " he believed himself in soundings; neither, when " that accident happened, would he have left the " ship until she had been stove to pieces, especially " when the tide was making; wherefore, by this "time, I do suppose he has been tried by a court-" martial, and executed for his cowardice and mif-" conduct."-I could not help fmiling at the description of my uncle's ladder, by which he proposed to climb to the attention of the board of admiralty; and though I knew the world too well, to confide in fuch dependance myself, I would not discourage him with doubts; but asked if he had no friend in London, who would advance a small sum of money to enable him to appear as he ought, and make a small present to the under-fecretary, who might possibly dispatch his business the sooner on that account, -He scratched his. his head, and, after some recollection, replied, "Why, yes, I believe Daniel Whipcord the shipchandler in Wapping would not refuse me such a
fmall matter—I know I can have what credit I
want, for lodging, liquor, and clothes; but as to
money, I won't be positive:—Had honest Block
been living, I should not have been at a loss."
I was heartily forry to find a worthy man so destitute
of friends, when he had such need of them; and
looked upon my own situation as less miserable than
his, because I was better acquainted with the selfsshness and roguery of mankind; consequently less liable
to disappointment and imposition.

ుహాంచ్లాంస్టాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం స్టాండ్లాం

1

0.

.

d

h

e

it.

h

d

13

CHAP. XLII.

He takes his passage in a cutter for Deal—we are accosted by a priest, who proves to be a Scotchman—his profession of friendship—be is affronted by the lieutenant, who afterwards appeases him by submission—my uncle embarks—I am introduced by a priest to a capuchin, in whose company I set out for Paris—the character of my fellow-traveller—an adventure on the road—I am shocked at his behaviour.

WHEN our repast was ended, we walked down to the harbour, where we found a cutter that was to sail for Deal in the evening, and Mr. Bowling agreed for his passage: In the mean time, we sauntred about the town to satisfy our curiosity, our conversation turning on the subject of my designs, which were not as yet fixed: Neither

can it be supposed, that my mind was at ease, when I found myself reduced almost to extreme poverty, in the midst of foreigners, among whom I had not one acquaintance to advise or befriend me. uncle was fensible of my forlorn condition, pressed me to accompany him to England, where he did not doubt of finding some fort of provision for me: But besides the other reasons I had for avoiding that kingdom, I looked upon it, at this time, as the worst country in the universe for a poor honest man to live in; and therefore determined to remain in France, at all events. I was confirmed in this refolution, by a reverend prieft, who paffing by at this time, and overhearing us speak English, accosted us in the same language, telling us he was our countryman, and wishing it might be in his power to do us any fervice: We thanked this grave person for his courteous offer, and invited him to drink a glass with us, which he did not think proper to refuse, and we went all together into a tavern of his recommending. After having drank to our healths in a bumper of good Burgundy, he began to enquire into our fituation, particularly the place of our nativity, which we no fooner named, than he started up, and wringing our hands with great fervour, shed a flood of tears, crying, "I come from the same part of the country! 66 perhaps you are my own relations." I was on my guard against his caresses, which I suspected very much, when I remembered the adventure of the money-dropper; but without any appearance of diffidence, observed, that as he was born in that part of the country he must certainly know our families, which (howfoever mean our prefent appearance might be) were none of the most obscure or inconsiderable. -Then I discovered our names, to which I found he was no stranger; he had known my grandfather personally; and notwithstanding an absence of fifty years from Scotland, recounted so many particulars of the families in the neighbourhood, that my scruples were entirely removed, and I thought myself happy in his acquaintance.—In the course of our conversation, I disclosed my condition without reserve, and displayed my talents to such advantage, that the old father looked upon me with admiration, and assured me, that if I staid in France, and listened to reason, I could not fail of making my fortune, to which he

would contribute all in his power.

My uncle began to be jealous of the priest's infinuation, and very abruptly declared, that if ever I should renounce my religion, he would break off all connexion and correspondence with me; for it was his opinion, that no honest man would swerve from the principles in which he was bred, whether Turkish, Protestant, or Roman .- The father, affronted at this declaration, with great vehemence, began a long discourse, setting forth the danger of obslinacy, and shutting one's eyes against the light: He said, that ignorance would be no plea towards justification, when we had opportunities of being better informed; and that if the minds of people had not been open to conviction, the Christian religion could not have been propagated in the world; and we should now be in a state of Pagan darkness and barbarity: He endeavoured to prove, by some texts of scripture, and many quotations from the fathers, that the Pope was the successor of St. Peter, and vicar of Jesus Christ; that the church of Rome was the true holy, catholic church; and that the protestant faith was an impious herefy, and damnable schism, by which many millions of fouls would fuffer everlafting perdition .-When he had finished his fermon, which I thought he pronounced with more zeal than discretion, he addressed himself to my uncle, and desired to know his objections to what had been faid. The lieutenant, whose attention had been wholly engrossed by his own affairs, took the pipe out of his mouth,

and replied, " As for me, friend, d'ye fee, I have " no objection to what you fay, it may be either " true or false for what I know; I meddle with no 66 body's affairs but my own; the gunner to his lin-" flock, and the fleersman to the helm, as the faying is .- I trust to no creed but the compass, and " do unto every man as I would be done by; fo that "I defy the pope, the devil, and the pretender; " and hope to be faved as well as another."-This affociation of persons gave great offence to the friar, who protested in a mighty passion, that if Mr. Bowling had not been his countryman, he would have caused him to be imprisoned for his insolence.—I ventured to disapprove of my uncle's rashness, and appealed the old gentleman, by affuring him, there was no offence intended by my kinfman, who by this time, fensible of his error, shook the injured party by the hand, and asked pardon for the freedom he had taken -Matters being amicably compromised, he invited us to come and fee him in the afternoon at the convent to which he belonged, and took his leave for the prefent; when my uncle recommended it strongly to me to persevere in the religion of my forefathers, whatever advantages I might propose to myself by a change, which could not fail of difgracing myfelf, and dishonouring my family. I affured him no confideration should induce me to forfeit his friendship and good opinion, on that score; at which affurance he discovered great satisfaction, and put me in mind of dinner, which we immediately bespoke, and when it was ready ate together.

I imagined my acquaintance with the Scottish priest, if properly managed, might turn out to my advantage, and therefore resolved to cultivate it as much as I could. With this view we visited him at his convent, according to his invitation, where he treated us with wine and sweetmeats, and shewed us every thing that was remarkable in the monastery.—

Having

Having been thus entertained, we took our leave, though not before I had promifed to see him next day; and the time fixed for my uncle's embarking being come, I accompanied him to the harbour, and saw him on board.—We parted not without tears, after we had embraced and wished one another all manner of prosperity; and he entreated me to write to him often, directing to Lieutenant Bowling, at the sign of the Union Flag, near the Hermitage, London.

I returned to the house in which we had met, where I passed the night in a very solitary manner, reflecting on the feverity of my fate, and endeavouring to project some likely scheme of life for the future; but my invention failed me; I faw nothing but unfurmountable difficulties in my way, and was ready to despair at the miserable prospect! That I might not, however, neglect any probable means, I got up in the morning, and went directly to the father, whose advice and affistance I implored .-He received me very kindly, and gave me to underfland, that there was one way of life in which a person of my talents could not fail of making a great figure.—I gueffed his meaning, and told him once for all, I was fully determined against any alteration in point of religion, therefore if his propofal regarded the church, he might fave himself the trouble of explaining it. He shook his head, and sighed, saying, " Ah! fon, fon, what a glorious prospect is here " spoiled, by your stubborn prejudice! Suffer your-" felf to be perfuaded by reason, and consult your " temporal welfare, as well as the concerns of your " eternal foul .- I can, by my interest, procure your " admission as a noviciate into this convent, where " I will superintend and direct you with a truly pa-" ternal affection."—Then he launched out into the praises of a monastic life, which no noise disturbs, no cares molest, and no danger invades—where the heart

h

S

t

e

g

heart is weaned from carnal attachments, the groffer appetites subdued and chastised, and the soul wasted to divine regions of philosophy and truth, on the wings of studious contemplation. - But his eloquence was loft upon me, whom two confiderations enabled to withstand his temptations; namely, my promise to my uncle, and my aversion to an ecclesiastical life: for as to the difference of religion, I looked upon it as a thing of too small moment to come in competition with a man's fortune.-Finding me immoveable on this head, he told me, he was more forry than offended at my non-compliance, and still ready to employ his good offices in my behalf .- " The se same erroneous maxims (said he) that obstruct your promotion in the church, will infallibly preee vent your advancement in the army; but if you can brook the condition of a fervant, I am ac-" quainted with some people of rank at Versailles, to whom I can give you letters of recommendation, that you may be entertained by some one of them, " in quality of maitre d'hotel; and I do not doubt that your qualifications will foon intitle you to a better provision."—I embraced his offer with great eagerness; and he appointed me to come back in the afternoon, when he would not only give me letters, but likewise introduce me to a capuchin of his acquaintance, who intended to fet out for Paris next morning, in whose company I might travel, without being at the expence of one livre during the whole journey. This piece of good news gave me infinite pleasure; I acknowledged my obligation to the benevolent father, in the most grateful expressions; and he performed his promise to a tittle, in delivering the letters, and making me acquainted with the capuchin, with whom I departed next morning by break of day.

It was not long before I discovered my fellow-traveller to be a merry facetious fellow, who, not-

withstanding his profession and appearance of mortification, loved good eating and drinking better than his rosary, and paid more adoration to a pretty girl than to the Virgin Mary, or St. Genevieve. He was a thick brawny young man, with red eye-brows, a hook-nofe, a face covered with freckles; and his name was Frere Balthazar. His order did not permit him to wear linen, so that having little occasion to undress himself, he was none of the cleanliest animals in the world; and his conflitution was naturally fo firongly scented, that I always thought it convenient to keep to the windward of him in our march.—As he was perfectly well known on the road, we fared fumptuoufly without any cost, and the fatigue of our journey was much alleviated by the good humour of my companion, who fung an infinite number of catches on the subjects of love and wine. We took up our lodging the first night at a peasant's house, not far from Abbeville, where we were entertained with an excellent ragout, cooked by our landlord's daughters, one of whom was very handsome: After having eaten heartily, and drank a fufficient quantity of small wine, we were conducted to a barn, where we found a couple of carpets spread upon clean straw for our reception.—We had not lain in this fituation above half an hour, when we heard somebody knock softly at the door, upon which Balthazar got up, and let in our host's two daughters, who wanted to have fome private conversation with him in the dark; when they had whispered together some time, the capuchin came to me, and asked if I was insensible to love, and so hard-hearted as to refuse a share of my bed to a pretty maid, who had a tendre for me?——I must own, to my shame, that I suffered myself to be overcome by my passion, and with great eagerness seized the occasion, when I understood that the amiable Nanette was to be my bedfellow. In vain did my reason suggest the respect that I owed to my dear mistress

)

,

t

2

t

e

3,

-

t

le

te

e-

; r-

he

by

N-

ng

Narcissa; the idea of that lovely charmer rather increased than allayed the ferment of my spirits; and the young paifanne had no reason to complain of my remembrance. Early in the morning, the kind creatures left us to our repose, which lasted till eight o'clock, when we got up, and were treated at breakfast with chocolate and l'eau de vie, by our paramours, of whom we took a tender leave, after my companion had confessed and given them absolution .-While we proceeded on our journey, the conversation turned upon the night's adventure, being introduced by the capuchin, who asked me how I liked my lodging: I declared my fatisfaction, and talked in rapture of the agreeable Nanette; at which he shook his head, and smiling said, she was a morceau pour la bonne "I never valued myfelf (continued he) upon " any thing so much as the conquest of Nanette; and, vanity apart, I have been pretty fortunate in " my amours."—This information shocked me not a little, as I was well convinced of his intimacy with her fifter; and though I did not care to tax him with downright incest, I professed my astonishment at his last night's choice, when, I supposed, the other was at his devotion .- To this hint he answered, that befides his natural complaifance to the fex, he had another reason to distribute his favours equally between them, namely, to preserve peace in the family, which could not otherwise be maintained; that moreover Nanette had conceived an affection for me, and he loved her too well to baulk her inclination; more especially, when he had an opportunity of obliging his friend at the same time. - I thanked him for this instance of his friendship, though I was extremely disgusted at his want of delicacy, and curfed the occasion that threw me in his way.—Libertine as I was, I could not bear to fee a man behave so wide of the character he affumed: I looked upon him as a person of very little worth or honesty, and should have even kept a wary eye eye upon my pocket, if I had thought he could have any temptation to steal.---But I could not conceive the use of money to a capuchin, who is obliged, by the rules of his order, to appear like a beggar, and enjoys all other necessaries of life gratis; besides, my fellow-traveller seemed to be of a complexion too careless and sanguine, to give me any apprehension on that score; so that I proceeded with great considence, in expectation of being soon at my journey's end.

CHAP. XLIII.

n

n

h

IS

.

1-

n

er

ed y,

at

is

is

W

ot

he

le

ry

ye

We lodge at a bouse near Amiens, where I am robbed by the capuchin, who escapes while I am asseep—I go to Noyons in search of him, but without success—make my condition known to several people, but sind no relief—grow desperate—join a company of soldiers—enlist in the regiment of Picardy—we are ordered into Germany—I find the satigues of the march almost intolerable—quarrel with my comrade in a dispute about politics—he challenges me to the field, wounds and disarms me.

At a house near Amiens, where Balthazar being unknown, we supped upon indifferent fare, and sour wine, and were fain to lie in a garret upon an old matrass, which, I believe, had been in the possession of ten thousand myriads of sleas, time out or mind.---We did not invade their territory with impunity; in less than a minute we were attacked by slings innumerable, in spite of which, however, we Vol. II.

t

0

t

a

d

ti

to

è

r

CI

ar

ni

pi

W

or

fic

th

re

ha

in

fc(

fell fast asleep, being excessively fatigued with our day's march, and did not wake till nine next morning, when feeing myfelf alone, I started up in a terrible fright, and examining my pockets, found my prefaging fear too true! My companion had made free with my cash, and left me to feek my way to Paris by myfelf! I ran down flairs immediately; and with a look full of grief and amazement, enquired for the mendicant, who, they gave me to underfland, had fet out four hours before, after having told them, I was a little indisposed, and defired I might not be disturbed, but be informed when I should wake that he had taken the road to Noyons, where he would wait for my coming, at the Coq d'Or. I spoke not a word, but with a heavy heart directed my course to that place, at which I arrived in the afternoon, fainting with weariness and hunger: but learned, to my utter confusion, that no such person had been there!---It was happy for me, that I had a good deal of refentment in my constitution, which animated me on fuch occasions, against the villany of mankind, and enabled me to bear misfortunes otherwise intolerable .--- Boiling with indignation, I discovered to the hoft my deplorable condition, and inveighed with great bitterness against the treachery of Balthazar; at which he shrugged up his shoulders, and, with a peculiar grimace in his countenance, faid, he was forry for my misfortune; but there was no remedy like patience .-- At that instant some guests arrived, to whom he haftened to offer his service, leaving me mortified at his indifference, and fully perfuaded that an inn-keeper is the fame fordid animal all the world over .--- While I stood in the porch, forlorn and undetermined, venting ejaculations of curses against the thief who robbed me, and the old priest who recommended him to my friendship; a young gentleman richly dreffed, attended by a valet de chambre and two fervants in livery, arrived at the inn. I thought

thought I perceived a great deal of sweetness and good nature in his countenance; therefore he had no fooner alighted than I accosted him, and in a few words explained my fituation: He liftened with great politeness, and when I had made an end of my ftory faid, "Well, monfieur, what would you have me " to do?" I was effectually abashed at this interrogation, which I believed no man of common fense or generofity could make, and made no other reply than a low bow: He returned the compliment still lower, and tript into an apartment, while the landlord let me know, that my standing there to internipt company, gave offence, and might do him infinite prejudice .- He had no occasion to repeat his infinuation; I moved from the place immediately; and was fo much transported with grief, anger, and disdain, that a torrent of blood gushed from my nostrils .-- In this extafy, I quitted Noyons, and betook myfelf to the fields, where I wandered about like one diffracted, till my spirits were quite exhausted, and I was obliged to throw myfelf down at the root of a tree, to rest my wearied limbs .--- Here my rage forfook me; I began to feel the importunate cravings of nature, and relapfed into filent forrow, and melancholy reflection. I revolved all the crimes I had been guilty of, and found them so few and venial, that I could not comprehend the justice of that providence, which after having exposed me to so much wretchedness and danger, lest me a prey to famine at last in a foreign country, where I had not one friend or acquaintance to close my eyes, and do the last ofhees of humanity to my miserable carcass.—A thousand times I wished myself a bear, that I might retreat to woods and defarts, far from the inhospitable haunts of man, where I could live by my own talents. independent of treacherous friends, and supercilious fcorn.

As I lay in this manner groaning over my hapless fate, I heard the found of a violin, and raising my head, perceived a company of men and women dancing on the grass at some distance from me .-- I looked upon this to be a favourable feafon for diffress to attract compassion, when every felfish thought is banished, and the heart dilated with mirth and social joy; wherefore I got up and approached those happy people, whom I foon discovered to be a party of soldiers, with their wives and children, unbending and diverting themselves at this rate, after the fatigue of a march .-- I had never before feen fuch a parcel of scare-crows together, neither could I reconcile their meagre gaunt looks, their squalid and ragged attire, and every other external symptom of extreme woe, with this appearance of fellivity .--- I faluted them, however, and was received with great politeness; after which they formed a ring, and danced around me. - This jollity had a wonderful effect upon my spirits! I was infected with their gaiety, and in spite of my dismal fituation, forgot my cares, and joined in their extravagance .-- When we had recreated ourselves a good while at this diversion, the ladies spread their manteaus on the ground, upon which they emptied their knapfacks of some onions, coarse bread, and a few flasks of poor wine: Being invited to a share of the banquet, I fat down with the rest, and in the whole course of my life never made a more comfortable meal. --When our repast was ended, we got up again to dance; and now that I found myfelf refreshed, I behaved to the admiration of every body: I was loaded with a thousand compliments, and professions of friendship; the men commended my person and agility, and the women were loud in praise of my binne grace; the ferjeant in particular, expressed so much regard for me, and described the pleasures of a soldier's life, with fo much art, that I began to listen to his proposal of enlisting me in the service; and the more

more I considered my own condition, the more I was convinced of the necessity I was under to come to a speedy determination.—Having therefore maturely weighed the circumstances pro and con, I signified my consent, and was admitted into the regiment of Picardy, said to be the oldest corps in Europe.—The company to which this command belonged, was quartered at a village not far off, whither we marched next day, and I was presented to my captain, who seemed very well pleased with my appearance, gave me a crown to drink, and ordered me to be accommodated with clothes, arms, and accoutrements.—Then I sold my livery suit, purchased linen, and as I was at great pains to learn the exercise, in a very

short time became a complete soldier.

1

s

d

S

f

-

d

f

10

1-

to

re

It was not long before we received orders to join feveral more regiments, and march with all expedition into Germany, in order to reinforce Mareschal Duc de Noailles, who was then encamped with his army on the fide of the river Mayne, to watch the motions of the English, Hanoverians, Austrians, and Hesfians, under the command of the Earl of Stair. began our march accordingly, and then I became acquainted with that part of a foldier's life to which I had been hitherto a stranger .-- It is impossible to defcribe the hunger and thirst I fustained, and the fatigue I underwent in a march of so many hundred miles; during which, I was fo much chafed with the heat and motion of my limbs, that in a very short time the infide of my thighs and legs were deprived and I proceeded in the utmost torture. This misfortune I owed to the plumpness of my constitution, which I curfed, and envied the withered condition of my comrades, whose bodies could not spare juice enough to supply a common issue, and were indeed proof against all manner of friction. The continual pain I felt made me fretful, and my peevishness was increased by the mortification of my D 3 pride pride in seeing those miserable wretches, whom a hard gale of wind would have scattered through the air like chaff, bear those toils with alacrity, under which

I was ready to fink.

One day while we enjoyed a halt, and the foldiers with their wives had gone out to dance, according to custom, my comrade staid at home with me on pretence of friendship, and insulted me with his pity and confolation! He told me. though I was young and tender at present, I would soon be seasoned to the fervice; and he did not doubt but I should have the honour to contribute in fome measure to the glory of the king .-- " Have courage, therefore, my " child, (faid he) and pray to the good God, that " you may be as happy as I am, who have had the honour of ferving Lewis the Great, and of receiving many wounds in helping to establish his es glory."--- When I looked upon the contemptible object that pronounced these words, I was amazed at the infatuation that poffeffed him; and could not help expressing my astonishment at the absurdity of a rational being, who thinks himself highly honoured in being permitted to encounter abject poverty, oppression, famine, disease, mutilation, and evident death, merely to gratify the vicious ambition of a prince, by whom his fufferings were difregarded, and his name utterly unknown .-- I observed that if his fituation was the confequence of compulsion, I would praise his patience and fortitude in bearing his lot; ... if he had taken up arms in defence of his injured country, he was to be applauded for his patriotifin; --or if he had fled to this way of life as a refuge from a greater evil, he was justifiable in his own conscience (tho' I could have no notion of mifery more extreme than that he suffered;) but to put his condition on the footing of conducing to the glory of his prince, was no more than professing himself a desperate flave, who voluntarily underwent the utmost wretchedness and

and peril, and committed the most slagrant crimes, to sooth the barbarous pride of a sellow-creature, his superior in nothing but the power he derived from the submission of such wretches as him. The soldier was very much affronted at the liberty I took with his king, which he said nothing but my ignorance could excuse: He affirmed, that the characters of princes were sacred, and ought not to be profuned by the censure of their subjects, who were bound by their allegiance to obey their commands, of what nature soever, without scruple or repining.——And a vised me to correct the rebellious principles I had imbibed among the English, who, for their insolence to their kings, were notorious all over the world, even to a

proverb.

In vindication of my countrymen, I repeated all the arguments commonly used to prove that every man has a natural right to liberty; that allegiance and protection are reciprocal; that when the mutual tie is broken by the tyranny of the king, he is accountable to the people for his breach of contract, and subject to the penalty of the law; and that those insurrections of the English, which are branded with the name of rebellion, by the flaves of arbitrary power, were no other than glorious efforts to rescue that independence which was their birthright, from the ravenous claws of usurping ambition .-- The Frenchman, provoked at the little deference I paid to the kingly name, loft all patience, and reproached me in fuch a manner, that my temper forfook me, and I clenched my fift, with an intention to give him a hearty box on the ear .-- Perceiving my defign, he started back, and demanded a parley; upon which I checked my indignation, and he gave me to understand that a Frenchman never forgave a blow; therefore, if I was not weary of my life, I would do wellto spare him that mortification, and do him the honour of measuring his sword with mine, like a gen-D 4

tleman .--- I took his advice, and followed him to a field hard by, where indeed I was ashamed at the pitiful figure of my antagonist, who was a poor, little, shivering creature, decrepit with age, and blind of one eye .-- But I foon found the folly of judging from appearances; being at the fecond pass wounded in the fword hand, and immediately difarmed with fuch a jerk, that I thought the joint was dislocated. --- I was no less confounded than enraged at this event, especially as my adversary did not bear his succels with all the moderation that might have been expected; for he infifted upon my asking pardon for affronting his king and him .--- This propofal I would by no means comply with, but told him it was a mean condescension, which no gentleman in his circumstances ought to propose, nor any in my situation ought to perform ; --- and that if he perfifted in his ungenerous demand, I would in my turn claim fatisfaction with my mufket, when we should be more upon a par than with the fword, of which he feemed fo much master.

CHAP. XLIV.

In order to be revenged I learn the science of defence.— We join the Mareschal Duc de Noailles—are engaged with the allies at Dettingen, and put to slight—the behaviour of the French soldiers on that occasion—I industriously seek another combat with the old Gascon, and vanquish him in my turn—our regiment is put into winter quarters at Rheims, where I find my friend Strap—our recognition, he supplies me with money, and procures my discharge—we take a trip to Paris; from whence by the way of Flanders we set out for London, where we safely arrive.

Which he made no reply, but repaired to the dancers, among whom he recounted his victory with many exaggerations and gasconades; while I, taking up my sword, went to my quarters, and examined my wound, which I sound was of no consequence.—The same day, an Irish drummer, having heard of my missortune, visited me, and after having condoled me on the chance of war, gave me to understand, that he was master of his sword, and would in a very short time instruct me so thoroughly in that noble science, that I should be able to chastise the old Gascon for his insolent boasting at my expence.—This friendly office he proffered on pretence of the regard he had for his countrymen; but I afterwards learned the true mo-

tive was no other than a jealoufy he entertained of a correspondence between the Frenchman and his wife, which he did not think proper to refent in person. ---Be this as it will, I accepted his offer, and practifed his lessons with such application, that I soon believed myself a match for my conqueror .-- In the mean time we continued our march, and arrived at the camp of Mareschal Noailles, the night before the battle of Dettingen. Notwithstanding the fatigue we had undergone, our regiment was one of those that were ordered next day to cross the river, under the command of the Duc de Gramont, to take possession of a narrow defile, through which the allies must of necessity have passed at a great disadvantage, or remain where they were, and perish for want of provision, if they would not condescend to surrender at discretion .---How they suffered themselves to be pent up in this manner, it is not my province to relate; I shall only observe, that when we had taken possession of our ground, I heard an old officer in conversation with another, express a surprise at the conduct of Lord Stair, who had the reputation of a good general .---But it feems, at this time, that nobleman was overruled, and only acted in an inferior character; fo that no part of the blame could be imputed to him, who declared his disapprobation of the step, in confequence of which the whole army was in the utmost danger; but providence or deftiny acted miracles in their behalf, by difposing the Duc de Gramont to quit his advantageous post, pass the desile, and attack the English, who were drawn up in order of battle on the plain, and who handled us fo roughly, that after having loft a great number of men, we turned our backs without ceremony, and fled with fuch precipitation, that many hundreds perished in the river, through pure fear and confusion; for the enemy was fo generous, that they did not purfue us one inch of ground;

ground; and if our consternation would have permitted, we might have retreated with great order and deliberation .- But notwithstanding the royal clemency of the king of Great Britain, who headed the allies in person, and, no doubt, put a stop to the carnage, our loss amounted to 5000 men, among whom were many officers of distinction .--- Our milcarriage opened a passage for the foe to Hanau, whither they immediately marched, leaving their fick and wounded to the care of the French, who next day took possession of the field of battle, buried the dead, and treated the living with humanity .--- This circumstance was a great consolation to us, who thence took occasion to claim the victory; and the genius of the French nation never appeared more conspicuous than now, in the rhodomontades they uttered on the fubject of their generofity and courage: Every man, (by his own account) performed feats that eclipfed all the heroes of antiquity .--- One compared him elf to a lion retiring at leifure from his cowardly purfuers, who keep at a wary distance, and gall him with their darts .--- Another likened himself to a bear that retreats with his face to the enemy, who dare not affail him; and the third assumed the character of a desperate stag, that turns upon the hounds and keeps them at bay. - There was not a private foldier engaged, who had not by the prowefs of his fingle arm demolished a whole platoon, or put a squadron of horse to flight; and among others, the meagre Gascon extolled his exploits above those of Hercules or Charlemagne. ---- As I still retained my refentment for the difgrace I fuffered in my last rencontre with him, and now that I thought myself qualified, longed for an opportunity to retrieve my honour; I magnified the valour of the English with all the hyperboles I could imagine, and decried the pufillanimity of the French in the same stile, comparing them to hares flying before greyhounds, or mice pursued by cats; and passed an ironical compliment on the speed he exerted in his flight. which, confidering his age and infirmities, I faid was furprifing .--- He was flung to the quick by this farcasin, and with an air of threatening disdain, bade me know myself better, and remember the correction I had already received from him for my infolence; for he might not always be in the humour of sparing a wretch who abused his goodness. To this inuendo I made no reply but by a kick in the breech, which overturned him in an instant .---- He started up with wonderful agility, and drawing his fword, attacked me with great fury: Several people interposed, but when he informed them of its being an affair of honour, they retired and left us to decide the battle by ourfelves. I sustained his onset with little damage, having only received a small scratch on my right shoulder, and seeing his breath and vigour almost exhausted, affaulted him in my turn, closed with him, and wrested his sword out of his hand in the ftruggle .-- Having thus acquired the victory, I defired him to beg his life; to which demand he made no answer, but fhrugged up his shoulders to his ears. expanded his hands, elevated the skin on his forehead and eye-brows, and depressed the corners of his mouth in such a manner, that I could scarce refrain from laughing aloud at his grotesque appearance .---That I might, however, mortify his vanity, which triuphed without bounds over my misfortune, I thrust his fword up to the hilt in fomething (it was not a tanfy) that lay smoaking on the plain, and joined the rest of the foldiers with an air of tranquillity and indifference.

There was nothing more of moment attempted by either of the armies during the remaining part of the campaign, which being ended, the English marched back to the Netherlands; part of our army was detached to French Flanders; and our regiment ordered into winter quarters in Champagne.-----It was the

fate

e

V

n

fate of the grenadier company, to which I now belonged, to lie at Rheims, where I found myself in the utmost want of every thing: My pay, which amounted to five fols a day, far from supplying me with neceffaries, being scarce sufficient to procure a wretched subfistence, to keep soul and body together; so that I was, by hunger and hard duty, brought down to the meagre condition of my fellow-foldiers, and my linen reduced from three tolerable shirts, to two pair of fleeves and necks, the bodies having been long ago converted into spatter-dashes; and after all, I was better provided than any private man in the regiment. --- In this urgency of my affairs, I wrote to my uncle in England, though my hopes from that quarter were not at all fanguine, for the reasons I have already explained, and in the mean time had recourse to my old remedy patience, confoling myfelf with the flattering fuggettions of a lively imagination, that never abandoned me in my diffress.

One day, while I flood centinel at a gate of a general officer, a certain nobleman came to the door, followed by a gentleman in mourning, to whom, at parting, I heard him fay, "You may depend upon "my good offices." --- This affurance was answered by a low bow of the person in black, who turning to go away, discovered to me the individual countenance of my old friend and adherent Strap .-- I was fo much aftonished at the fight, that I lost the power of utterance, and before I could recollect myfelf, he was gone without taking any notice of me .---- Indeed, had he staid, I scarcely should have ventured to accost him; because, though I was perfectly well acquainted with the features of his face, I could not be positively certain as to the rest of his person, which was very much altered for the better, fince he left me at London; neither could I conceive by what means he was enabled to appear in the sphere of a gentleman, to which, while I knew him, he had not even the ambition

"

"

60

tl

t

2

6

f

6

•

d

t

2

bition to aspire. -- But I was too much concerned in the affair to neglect further information, and therefore took the first opportunity of asking the porter if he knew the gentleman to whom the marquis spoke. The Swifs told me, his name was monfieur d'Estrapes, that he had been valet de chambre to an English gentleman lately deceased, and that he was very much regarded by the marquis for his fidelity to his mafter, between whom and that nobleman a very intimate friendship had subsisted.-Nothing could be more agreeable to me than this piece of intelligence, which banished all doubt of its being my friend, who had found means to frenchify his name as well as his behaviour, fince we parted. As foon, therefore, as I was relieved, I went to his lodging, according to a direction given me by the Swifs, and had the good fortune to find him at home. That I might furprise him the more, I concealed my name and business, and only defired the fervant of the house, to tell Monfieur d'Estrapes, that I begged the honour of half an hour's conversation with him.—He was confounded and dismayed at the message, when he understood it was fent by a foldier: though he was confcious to himself of no crime, all that he had heard of the bastile appeared to his imagination with aggravated horror, and it was not before I had waited a confiderable time, that he had refolution enough to bid the fervant shew me up stairs .- When I entered his chamber, he returned my bow with great civility, and endeavoured, with forced complaifance, to difguife his fear, which appeared in the paleness of his face, the wildness of his looks, and the shaking of his limbs. - I was diverted at his consternation, which redoubled, when I told him in French, I had business for his private ear, and demanded a particular audience. -The valet being withdrawn, I asked in the same language, if his name was d'Estrapes, to which he answered with a faultering tongue, "The same, at ee vous

" your fervice." -- " Are you a Frenchman?" (faid I.) " -- I have not the honour of being a Frenchman " torn (replied he) but I have an infinite veneration " for the country."-I then defired he would do me the honour to look at me, which he no fooner did, than flruck with my appearance, he flarted back, and cried in English, "O Jesus !- sure it can't ! " No, 'tis impossible !"-I smiled at his interjections, faying, "I suppose you are too much of a gentle-" man to own your friend in adversity."-When he heard me pronounce these words in our own language, he leaped upon me in a transport of joy, hung about my neck, kiffed me from ear to ear, and blubbered like a great school-boy who had been whipt.-Then observing my dress, he fet up his throat, crying, " O Lord! O Lord! that ever I should live to see my " dearest friend reduced to the condition of a foot " foldier in the French fervice! Why did you con-" fent to my leaving you?-But I know the rea-" fon-you thought you had got more creditable " friends, and grew ashamed of my acquaintance .---" Ah! Lord help us! though I was a little short-" fighted, I was not altogether blind: - And " though I did not complain, I was not the less fen-" fible of your unkindness, which was indeed the " only thing that induced me to ramble abroad, the " Lord knows whither; but I must own it has been " a lucky ramble for me, and fo I forgive you, and " may God forgive you :-- O Lord! O Lord! is " it come to this?" --- I was nettled at the charge, which, though just, I could not help thinking unseafonable, and told him with fome tartness, that whether his fuspicions were well or ill grounded, he might have chosen a more convenient opportunity of introducing them: And that the question now was, whether or no he found himfelf disposed to lend me any affistance. - "Disposed! (replied he with great " emotion) I thought you had known me fo well,

t

1

1

es as to affure yourfelf without asking, that I, and all " that belongs to me, are at your command .--- In the e mean time, you shail dine with me, and I will tell " you fomething that, perhaps, will not be displea-" fing unto you." Then wringing my hand, he faid, " It makes my heart bleed to fee you in that "garb!"--- I thanked him for his invitation, which I observed, could not be unwelcome to a person who had not eaten a comfortable meal these seven months; but I had another request to make, which I begged he would grant before dinner, and that was the loan of a shirt: For although my back had been many weeks a ffranger to any comfort of that kind, my skin was not yet familiarized to the want of it .--- He flared in my face, with a woful countenance, at this declaration, which he could scarce believe, until I explained it, by unbuttoning my coat, and disclosing my naked body; a circumstance that shocked the tender-hearted Strap, who, with tears in his eyes, ran to a chest of drawers, and taking out some linen, presented to me a very fine ruffled holland shirt, and cambrick neckcloth, affuring me, he had three dozen of the fame kind at my fervice. — I was ravished at this piece of good news, and having accommodated myself in a moment, hugged my benefactor for his generous offer, faying, I was overjoyed to find him undebauched by prosperity, which seldom sails to corrupt the heart. He bespoke for dinner, some soup and bouillé, a couple of pullets roafted, and a dish of asparagus, and in the interim entertained me with bifcuit and burgundy; after which repast he entreated me to gratify his longing defire of knowing every circumstance of my fortune fince his departure from London .--- This request I complied with, beginning at the adventure of Gawky, and relating every particular event in which I had been concerned from that day to the prefent hour. During the recital, my friend was strongly affected, according to the various fituations described: He started with

with furprise, glowed with indignation, gaped with curiofity, smiled with pleasure, trembled with fear, and wept with forrow, as the vicissitudes of my life inspired these different passions; and when my story was ended, signified his amazement on the whole, by lifting up his eyes and hands, and protesting, that though I was a young man, I had suffered more than

all the bleffed martyrs.

11

10

11

1-

1e

at

h

0

:

ne

a

a

Ut

y

7,

t,

b

d

of

le

-

e

of

)-

,

y

t.

e.

n

S

y

.

f

I

.

-

d

After dinner, I defired in my turn to know the particulars of his peregrination, and he fatisfied me in a few words, by giving me to understand that he had lived a year at Paris with his master, who in that time having acquired the language, as well as the fashionable exercises, to perfection, made a tour of France and Holland, during which excursion, he was fo unfortunate as to meet with three of his own countrymen on their travels, in whose company he committed fuch excesses, that his constitution failed, and he fell into a confumption; that by the advice of physicians he went to Montpelier for the benefit of good air, and recovered fo well in fix weeks, that he returned to Rheims, feemingly in good health, where he had not continued above a month, when he was seized with a loofeness, that carried him off in ten days, to the unspeakable forrow of all who knew him, and especially of Strap, who had been very happy in his fervice, and given such satisfaction, that his master, on his death-bed, recommended him to several persons of distinction, for his diligence, sobriety, and affection, and left him by will, his wearing apparel, gold watch, fword, rings, ready money, and all the moveables he had in France, to the value of three hundred pounds, "which I now (faid he) in the " fight of God and man, furrender to your absolute " disposal: Here are my keys, take them, I beseech " you, and God give you joy of the possession."-My brain was almost turned by the sudden change of fortune, which I could scarce believe real; however, I positively refused this extravagant proffer of my friend, and put him in mind of my being a foldier; at which hint he started, crying, "Odso! that's " true---we must procure your discharge .-- I have fome interest with a nobleman who is able to do ee me that favour." --- We confulted about this affair, and it was determined, that Monfieur d'Estrapes should wait upon the marquis in the morning, and tell him he had by accident found his brother, whom he had not feen for many years before, a private foldier in the regiment of Picardy, and implore that nobleman's interest for his discharge .- - In the mean time we enjoyed ourselves over a bottle of good burgundy, and fpent the evening in concerting schemes for our future conduct, in case I should be so lucky as to get rid of the army .-- The business was to make ourselves easy for life, by means of his legacy, a task very difficult, and in the usual methods of laying out money, altogether impracticable; fo that after much canvaffing, we could come to no refolution that night, but when we parted, recommended the matter to the serious attention of each other. As for my own part, I puzzled my imagination to no purpose; when I thought of turning merchant, the smallness of our stock, and the risk of seas, enemies, and markets, deterred me from that scheme .-- If I should fettle as a surgeon in my own country, I would find the business already overstocked; or if I pretended to fet up in England, must labour under want of friends, and powerful opposition, obstacles unsurmountable by the most shining merit; neither should I succeed in my endeavours to rife in the flate, inafmuch as I could neither flatter nor pimp for courtiers, nor prostitute my pen in defence of a wicked and contemptible administration .-- Before I could form any feasible project, I fell asleep, and my fancy was blessed with the image of the dear Narcissa, who seemed to smile upon my passion, and offer her hand as a reward for all my toils.

Y

e

0

3

d

-

it

n

3

0

,

e

r

1

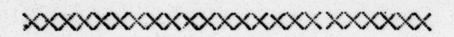
1

Early in the morning, I went to the lodgings of my friend, whom I found exulting over his happy invention; for I no sooner entered his apartment, than he addressed himself to me in these words, with a smile of felf-applause: "Well, Mr. Random, a lucky "thought may come into a fool's head fometimes, "I have hit it---l'll hold you a button my plan is " better than yours for all your learning .--- But you " shall have the preference in this as in all other "things; therefore proceed, and let us know the " effects of your meditation--- and then I will im-" part my own simple excogitations." --- I told him, that not one thought had occurred to me which deferved the least notice, and fignified my impatience to be acquainted with the fruits of his reflection .--- " As " we have not (faid he) money sufficient to maintain " us during a tedious expectation, it is my opinion, " that a bold push must be made; and I see none " fo likely to fucceed as your appearing in the cha-" racter of a gentleman (which is your due) and " making your addresses to some lady of fortune who " can render you independent at once .-- Nay, don't " flare --- I affirm that this scheme is both prudent and honourable; for I would not have you throw " yourfelf away upon an old toothlefs, wheezing " dame, whose breath would flink you into a con-" fumption in less than three months; neither would " I advise you to assume the character of a wealthy " Squire, as your common fortune-hunters do, by " which means many a poor lady is cheated into ma-" trimony, and instead of enjoying the pomp and " grandeur that was promised, sees her dowry seized " by her husband's rapacious creditors, and herself " reduced to mifery and defpair .-- No, I know you " have a foul that disdains such imposition; and are " master of qualifications both of mind and body, " which alone intitle you to a match, that will fet " you above the world .--- I have cloaths in my pof" fession that a duke need not be ashamed to wear.
" --- I believe they will fit you as they are; if not,
" there are plenty of taylors in France.--- Let us take
" a short trip to Paris, and provide ourselves with all
" other necessaries, then set out for England, where
" I intend to do myself the honour of attending you
" in quality of a valet.--- This expedient will save
" you the expence of a servant, shaving and dressing;
" and I doubt not but by the blessing of God, we
" shall bring matters to a speedy and fortunate issue."
--- Extravagant as this proposal was, I listened to it
with pleasure, because it stattered my vanity, and indulged a ridiculous hope I began to entertain of in-

spiring Narcissa with a mutual slame.

After breakfast, Monsieur d'Estrapes went to pay his devoirs to the marquis, and was fo successful in his application, that I obtained a discharge in a few days; upon which we set out for Paris .--- Here I had time to reflect and congratulate myself upon this sudden transition of fate, which to bear with moderation, required some degree of philosophy and selfdenial --- This truth will be more obvious, if I give a detail of the particulars, to the quiet possession of which I was raifed in an instant, from the most abject mifery and contempt. -- - My wardrobe confitted of five fashionable coats full mounted, two of which were plain, one of cut velvet, one trimmed with gold, and another with filver lace; two frocks, one of white drab with large plate buttons, the other of blue, with gold binding; one waitlcoat of gold brocade; one of blue factin, embroidered with filver; one of green filk, trimmed with broad figured gold-lace; one of black filk, with fringes; one of white fattin; one of black cloth, and one of scarlet; fix pair of cloth breeches; one pair of crimfon, and another of black velvet; twelve pair of white filk stockings, as many of black filk, and the same number of fine cotton; one hat, laced with gold point d'Espagne, another with filverlace scolloped, a third with gold binding, and a fourth plain; three dozen of fine ruffled shirts, as many neckcloths; one dozen of cambrick handkerchiefs. and the like number of filk. The other moveables which I possessed by the generosity and friendship of Strap, were a gold watch with a chased case, two valuable diamond rings, two mourning fwords, one with a filver handle, and a fourth cut steel inlaid with gold, a diamond flock-buckle, and a fet of flone buckles for the knees and thoes; a pair of filver mounted pistols with rich housings; a gold-headed cane, and a fnuff box of tortoife-shell mounted with gold, having the picture of a lady in the top .--- The gentleman left many other things of value, which my friend had converted into cash before I met with him; fo that over and above these particulars, our stock in ready money amounted to fomething more than two hundred pounds.

Thus equipt, I put on the gentleman of figure, and attended by my honest friend, who was contented with the station of my valet, visited the Louvre, examined the gallery of Luxemburgh, and appeared at Verfailles, where I had the honour of feeing his Most Christian Majesty eat a considerable quantity of olives .- During the month I spent at Paris, I went feveral times to court, the Italian comedy, opera, and play-house, danced at a masquerade, and, in short, saw every thing remarkable in and about that capital. Then we let out for England by the way of Flanders, passed through Brussels, Ghent, and Bruges, and took shipping at Ostend, from whence in fourteen hours we arrived at Deal, hired a post-chaife. and in twelve hours more got fafe to London; having disposed of our heavy baggage in the waggon.



CHAP. XLV.

I inquire for my uncle, and understand he is gone to sea—take lodgings at Charing-cross—go to the play, where I meet with an adventure—dine at an ordinary; the guests described—become acquainted with Medlar and doctor Wagtail.

A S foon as we alighted at the inn, I dispatched Strap to inquire for my uncle, at the Union Flag in Wapping; and he returned in a little time, with an account of Mr. Bowling's having gone to sea, mate of a merchant ship, after a long and unsuccessful application and attendance at the admiralty; where, it seems, the interest he depended upon, was not sufficient to reinstate him, or recover the pay that was due to him when he quitted the Thunder.

Next day I hired very handsome lodgings not far from Charing-cross; and in the evening, dressed myfelf in a plain suit of the true Paris cut, and appeared in a front box at the play, where I saw a good deal of company, and was vain enough to believe, that I was observed with an uncommon degree of attention and applause. This filly conceit intoxicated me so much, that I was guilty of a thoufand ridiculous coquetries; and I dare fay, how favourable foever the thoughts of the company might be at my first appearance, they were soon changed by my abfurd behaviour, into pity or contempt .--- I rose and sat down, covered and uncovered my head twenty times between the acts; pulled out my watch, clapped it to my ear, wound it up, fet it, gave it the hearing again ; --- displayed my snuff-box, affected to take

take fnuff, that I might have an opportunity of shewing my brilliant, and wiped my nofe with a perfumed handkerchief; -then dangled my cane, and adjusted my sword knot, and acted many more foolleries of the same kind, in hopes of obtaining the character of a pretty fellow, in the acquiring of which, I found two confiderable obstructions in my disposition; namely, a natural referve and jealous fenfibility. would I have entered into conversation with the people around me; but I was restrained by the fear of being censured for my affurance, as well as by reflecting that I was more entitled to a compliment of this kind from them, than they to such condescenfion from a stranger like me.-How often did I redden at the frequent whispers and loud laughter of my fellow beaus, which I imagined were excited by me! and how often did I e vy the happy indifference of those choice spirits who beheld the diffress of the fcene, without discovering the least symptom of approbation or concern! My attention was engaged in fpite of myself, and I could not help weeping with the heroine of the stage; though I practised a great many shifts to conceal this piece of unpolite weaknefs.-When the play was ended, I fat waiting for an opportunity of handing fome lady to her coach; but every one was attended by fuch a number of officious gallants, that for a long time I was baulked in my expectation .- At length, however, I perceived a very handsome creature, genteelly dressed, sitting by herfelf in a box, at some distance from me; upon which I went up to her, and offered my fervice .-She feemed to be in some confusion, thanked me for my complaifance, and with a tender look declined giving me the trouble; looking at her watch, and testifying her surprise at the negligence of her footman, whom she had ordered to have a chair ready for her at that hour.- I repeated my entreaty with all the eloquence and compliment I was master of; and

in the event, she was prevailed upon to accept of a propofal I made, to fend my fervant for a chair or coach: Accordingly, Strap was detached for that purpose, and returned without success: By this time the play-house was quite empty, and we were obliged to retire: As I led her through the passage, I obferved five or fix young fellows of fashion, standing in a corner, one of whom, as I thought, tipt my charmer the wink, and when we were past I heard them fet up a loud laugh.—This note aroused my attention, and I was refolved to be fully satisfied of this lady's character, before I should have any nearer connexion with her. - As no convenience appeared, I proposed to conduct her to a tavern, where we might flay a few minutes, till my fervant could fetch a coach from the Strand.—She feemed particularly fly of trufting herself in a tavern with a Aranger; but at last yielded to my pathetic remonstrances, rather than endanger her health, by remaining in a cold damp thorough-fare. - Having thus far fucceeded, I begged to know what wine she would be pleased to drink a glass of; but she professed the greatest aversion to all forts of strong liquors; and it was with much difficulty that I could persuade her to eat a jelly. - In the mean time, I endeavoured to alleviate the uneafiness she discovered, by faving all the agreeable things I could think of; at which the would often figh, and regard me with a languishing look, that feemed however too near a kin to the lewd leer of a courtezan.-This discovery added to my former sufpicion, while it put me upon my guard against her arts, divested me of referve, and enabled me to entertain her with gaiety and freedom. - In the course of her converfation, I pressed her to allow me the honour of waiting upon her next day, at her lodgings, a request, which she, with many apologies, refused, lest it should give umbrage to Sir John, who was of a disposition apt to be fretted with trifles .- This information

formation, by which I was to understand that her husband was a knight, did not check my addresses, which became more and more importunate, and I was even hardy enough to ravish a kiss. - But, O heavens! instead of banqueting on the ambrofial flavour that her delicacy of complexion promifed, I was almost fuffocated with the steams of Geneva! An exhalation of this kind from a mouth which had just before declared an utter abhorrence of all spirituous liquors, not only changed my doubts into certainty, but my raptures into loathing; and it would have been impossible for me to have preserved common complaifance five minutes longer, when my fervant returned with the coach. I took the advantage of this occafion, and presented my hand to the lady, who put in practice against me the whole artillery of her charms, ogling, languishing, fighing, and squeezing, with fo little referve, that Strap perceived her tenderness, and rubbed his hands with joy as he followed us to the door; -but I was proof against all her endearments, and handed her into the coach with an intention to take my leave immediately. She gueffed my defign, and invited me to her house, whispering, that now Sir John was gone to bed, the could have the pleasure of my conversation for half an hour, without interruption.—I told her there was no mortification I would not undergo, rather than endanger the repose of her ladyship; and bidding the coachman drive on, wished her a good night.—She lost all temper at my indifference, and stopping the coach at the distance of about twenty yards from me, popped out her head, and bawled with the lungs of a fish-woman, "Damn you, you dog, won't you pay the " coach-hire?" As I made no answer, she held forth against me with an eloquence peculiar to herfelf; calling me pitiful fellow, scoundrel, and an hundred fuch appellations; concluding with an oath, VOL. II.

that for all my appearance, she believed I had got no

money in my pocket.

Having thus vented her indignation, she ordered the coachman to proceed, and I returned to the tavern, where I bespoke something for supper, very well pleased at the issue of this adventure.—I dispenfed with the attendance of the waiter at table, on pretence that my own fervant was prefent, and when we were alone, faid to Strap, "Well, Monfieur "- d'Estrapes, what do you think of this lady?"-My friend, who had not opened his mouth fince her departure, could make no other reply than the monofyllable "Think;" which he pronounced with a note of fear and aftonishment .- Surprised at this emphasis, I surveyed my valet, and perceiving a wildness in his looks, asked if he had seen his grandfather's ghost? "Ghost! (said he) I am sure I have 66 feen a devil incarnate! Who would have thought that so much devilish malice and Billinsgate could " lurk under fuch fweetness of countenance and modesty of behaviour? Ah! God help us! Fronti " nulla fides-nimium ne crede colori-but we ought to down on our knees and bless God for delivering us " from the jaws of that painted sepulchre."-I was pretty much of Strap's opinion, and though I did not believe myself in any danger from the allurements of that fifterhood, I determined to act with great circumspection for the future, and shun all commerce of that kind, as equally prejudicial to my purfe and conflitution.

My next care was to introduce myself into a set of good acquaintance; for which purpose, I frequented a certain coffee-house, noted for the resort of good company, English as well as foreigners, where my appearance procured all the civilities and advances I could desire. As there was an ordinary in the same house, I went up stairs to dinner with the other guests, and found myself at a table with thirteen people,

people, the greatest part of whom were better dressed than myself .- The conversation, which was mostly carried on in the French, turned chiefly on politics; and I foon found the whole company was in the French interest, myself excepted, and a testy old gentleman, who contradicted every thing that was advanced in favour of his Most Christian Majesty, with a furliness truly English .- But this trusty patriot, who had never been out of his own country, and drew all his maxims and notions from prejudice and hearfay, was very unequal to his antagonists, who were superior to him in learning and experience, and often took the liberty of travellers, in afferting things which were not strictly true, because they thought themselves in no danger of being detected by him. - The claim of the queen of Spain to the Austrian dominions in Italy, was fully explained and vindicated, by a person who sat opposite to me, and by the folemnity of his manner, and the richness of his apparel, feemed to be a foreign embassador.—This differtation produced another on the Pragmatic Sanction, handled with great warmth by a young gentleman at my right hand, dreffed in a green frock trimmed with gold, who justified the French king for his breach of that contract; and affirmed that he could not have observed it, without injuring his own glory. Although I was not at all convinced by this gentleman's arguments, I could not help admiring his vivacity, which I imagined must be the effect of his illustrious birth and noble education, and accordingly rated him in my conjecture as a young prince on his travels.—The discourse was afterwards shifted by an old gentleman of a very martial appearance, to the last campaign, when the battle of Dettingen was fought over again, with fo many circumstances to the honour of the French, and disadvantage of the Allies. that I began to entertain some doubts of my having been there in person; and took the liberty to mention fome

fome objections to what he advanced.—This freedom introduced a dispute, which lasted a good while, to the mortification of all prefent; and was at last referred to the determination of a grave person, whom they fliled doctor, and who, under a shew of great moderation, decided it against me, with so little regard to truth, that I taxed him with partiality in pretty fevere terms, to the no small entertainment of the true English politician, who rejoiced at my defence of a cause he had so often espoused without feccess: My opponent, pleased with the victory he had gained, affected a great deal of candour, and told me, he should not have been so positive, if he had not been at great pains to inform himself of each particular .- " Indeed (faid he) I am convinced that, " the previous fleps confidered, things could not hapof pen otherwise; for we generals who have seen service, though we may not be on the fpot ourselves, es know by the least sketch of the disposition, what must be the event."-He then censured, with great freedom, every circumstance of the conduct of those who commanded the Allies; from thence made a transation to the ministry, which he honoured with many invectives, for employing people who had neither experience nor capacity, to the prejudice of old officers who had been diffinguished for both; dropt many hints of his own importance; and concluded with observing, that the French and Spaniards knew better how to value generals of merit; the good effects of which are seen in the conquests they gain, and the admirable discipline of their troops, which are at the fame time better clothed and paid than any foldiers in the universe. These remarks furnished the green knight with an opportunity of launching out in the praife of the French government in general, civil as well as military; on which occasion he made many odious comparisons to the disadvantage of the English: Every body, almost, assented to the observations he made.

made, and the doctor gave his fanction, by faying, the people in France were undoubtedly the happiest subjects in the world. - I was so much astonished and confounded at their infatuation and effrontery, that I had not power to utter one word in opposition to their affertions; but my morose affociate could not put up with the indignity that was offered to Old England, and therefore with a fatirical grin addressed himself to the general in these words: "Sir, Sir, I have often heard it faid, She's a villanous bird that befouls her " own nest .- As for what those people who are fo-" reigners fay, I don't mind it, they know no better; " but you who were bred and born, and have got " your bread under the English government, should " have more regard to gratitude as well as truth, in " censuring your native country .- If the ministry " have thought fit to lay you afide, I suppose they " have their own reasons for so doing; and you ought to remember that you still live on the bounty of this " nation. As for these gentlemen (meaning the of prince and ambaffador) who make so free with our " constitution, laws, and genius of our people, I " think they might shew a little more respect for their " benefactors, who, I must own, are to blame in " harbouring, protecting, and encouraging fuch un-" grateful vagrants as they are."-At these words the chevalier in green flarted up in a great paffion, and laying his hand on the hilt of his hanger, exclaimed, "Ha, foutre!" - The Englishman on the other hand, grafping his cane, cried, "Don't foutre me, " firrah, or by G-d, I'll knock you down."-The company interposed, the Frenchman sat down again, and his antagonist proceeded-" Lookee, Monsieur, " you know very well that had you dared to speak " fo freely of the administration of your own country " in Paris, as you have done of ours in London, you " would have been fent to the Bastile without cere-" mony, where you might have rotted in a dungeon, E 3

and never feen the light of the fun again .- Now, 66 Sir, take my word for it, although our constitution fcreens us from fuch oppression, we want not laws to chaftije the authors of feditious discourse; 44 and if I hear another syllable out of your mouth, 66 in contempt or prejudice of this kingdom, I will es give you a convincing proof of what I advance, and have you laid by the heels for your prefump-"tion." This declaration had an effect on the company as fudden as furprifing. - The young prince became supple as a spaniel, the embassador trembled, the general fat filent and abashed, and the doctor, who, it feems, had felt the rod of power, grew pale as death, and affured us all, that he had no intention to affront any person or people-" Your princiof ples, doctor, (refumed the old gentleman) are no " fecret - I have nothing to fay upon that head; but am very much furprifed, that a man, who despises us so much, should notwithstanding live ee among us, when he has no vitible motive for fo "doing-Why don't you take up your habitation " in your beloved France, where you may rail at "England without censure?"-To this remonstrance the doctor thought proper to make no reply; and an unfocial filence enfued; which I perceiving, took notice, that it was pity such idle disputes, maintained very often through whim or diversion, should create any misunderstanding among gentlemen of good sense; and proposed to drink down all animosity in another bottle.—This motion was applauded by the whole company: The wine was brought, and the English champion declaring he had no spleen against any man for differing in opinion from him, any more than for difference of complexion, drank to the good health of all present; the compliment was returned, and the conversation once more became unreserved, tho' more general than before.—Among other topicks, the subject of war was introduced, on which the general declaimed

declaimed with great eloquence, recounting many of his own exploits by way of illustration. In the course of his harangue he happened to mention the word epaulement, upon which the tefty gentleman asked the meaning of that term.—" I'll tell you what an epaule-" ment is (replied he)-I never faw an epaulement but once—and that was at the fiege of Namur— " in a council of war, Monsieur Cohorn, the famous " engineer, affirmed that the place could not be " taken." -- " Yes (said the prince of Vaudemont) it may be taken by an epaulement."-This was " immediately put in execution, and in twenty-four " hours, Mareschal Boufflers was fain to capitulate." Here he made a full ftop, and the old gentleman repeated the question, "But pray what is an epaule-" ment?" To this interrogation the officer made no immediate reply, but rung the bell, and called for a bill, which being brought, he threw down his proportion of the reckoning, and telling the company, he would shew them an epaulement when his majesty should think fit to entrust him with the command of our army abroad, strutted away with great dignity. I could not imagine why he was fo fly of explaining one of the most simple terms of fortification; which I forthwith described as a side-work composed of earth, gabions, or fascines; but I was very much furprised when I afterwards understood that his referve proceeded from his ignorance.-Having paid our bill, we adjourned to the coffee-room, where my fellow-labourer infifted on treating me with a dish, giving me to understand at the same time, that I had acquired his good opinion, both with respect to my principles and understanding.-I thanked him for his compliment, and professing myself an utter stranger in this part of the world, begged he would have the goodness to inform me of the quality and characters of the people who dined above. This request was a real favour to one of his disposition, which was no less communicative than curious; he therefore com-E 4 plied. plied with great fatisfaction, and told me, to my extreme aftonishment, that the supposed young prince was a dancer at one of the theatres; and the ambaffador no other than a fidler belonging to the opera. "The doctor (said he) is a Roman catholic prieft, who fometimes appears in the character of an offiec cer, and assumes the name of captain; but more es generally takes the garb, title, and behaviour of a on physician, in which capacity he wheedles himself into the confidence of weak minded people, and by arguments no less specious than false, converts " them from their religion and allegiance.-He has " been in the hands of justice more than once for " fuch practices; but he is a fly dog, and manages matters with fo much craft, that hitherto he has es escaped for a short imprisonment. -- As for the ec general, you may fee he has owed his promotion " more to his interest than his capacity; and now that the eyes of the ministry are opened, his friends of dead, or become inconsiderable, he is struck off ee the lift, and obliged to put up with a yearly pen-" fion; in consequence of this reduction, he is be-" come malcontent, and inveighs against the government in all companies, with fo little difcre-"tion, that I am furprised at the lenity of the ade ministration in overlooking his insolence; but the " truth of the matter is, he owes his fafety to his " weakness and want of importance. - He has seen " a little, and but a little service, and yet if you will take his word for it, there has not been a ee great action performed in the field fince the Revoe lution, in which he was not principally concerned. When a story is told of any great general, he imer mediately matches it with one of himself, though ec he is often unhappy in his invention, and commits of fuch gross blunders in the detail, that every body is " in pain for him.-Cæfar, Pompey, and Alexanee der the Great are continually in his mouth; and as

" he reads a good deal without any judgment to dies gest it, his ideas are confused, and his harangues as unintelligible as infinite; for, once he begins, " there is no chance of his leaving off speaking, " while one person remains to yield attention; there-" fore the only expedient I know, for putting a stop to his loquacity, is to lay hold of some incongruity he has uttered, and demand an explanation; or " ask the meaning of some difficult term that he "knows by name only; this method will effectually er put him to filence if not to flight, as it happened " when I enquired about an epaulement.-Had he been acquainted with the fignification of that word, his " triumph would have been intolerable, and we must " have quitted the field first, or been worried with " impertinence."-Having thus gratified my curiofity, the old gentleman began to discover his own, in questions relating to myself, to which I thought proper to return ambiguous answers .- " I presume, " Sir, (faid he) you have travelled."—I answered, "Yes." "I dare fay, you would find it very exer penfive," (faid he.)—I replied, "To be fure, one " cannot travel without money."-" That I know " by experience (faid he) for I myself take a trip to 66 Bath or Tunbridge every feafon; and one must 44 pay fauce for what he has on the road as well in other countries as in this-That's a very pretty " flone in your ring, -give me leave, Siret the French have attained a wonderful skill in es making compositions of this kind.-Why now, "this looks almost as well as a diamond."-" Alof most as well, Sir, (faid I) why not altogether?-" I'm fure if you understand any thing of jewels, wou must perceive at first fight, that this stone is es a real diamond, and that of a very fine water. " Take it in your hand, and examine it."-He did fo, with some confusion, and returned it, saying, " I ask your pardon, I see it is a true brilliant of E 5 " immense

" immense value."—I imagined his respect for me increased after this inquiry; therefore, to captivate his esteem the more, I told him, I would shew him a feal of composition, engraved after a very valuable antique; upon which I pulled out my watch with a rich gold chain, adorned with three feals fet in gold, and an opal ring. - He viewed each of them with great eagerness, handled the chain, admired the chased case, and observed, that the whole must have cost me a vast sum of money. I affected indifference, and replied in a careless manner, "Some trifle of fixty " or feventy guineas."-He stared in my face for some time, and then asked if I was an Englishman? I answered in the negative.—" You are from Ire-" land then, Sir, I prefume," (said he.) I made the fame reply. "O! perhaps (faid he) you was born in one of our fettlements abroad."-I still answered, No.-He feemed very much surprised, and said, he was fure I was not a foreigner. - I made no reply, but left him upon the tenterhooks of impatient uncertainty.—He could not contain his anxiety, but asked pardon for the liberties he had taken, and to encourage me the more to disclose my situation, displayed his own without referve. - " I am (faid he) a " fingle man, have a confiderable annuity, on which " I live according to my own inclination; and make "the ends of the year meet very comfortably. " As I have no estate to leave behind me, I am not " troubled with the importunate officiousness of rece lations, or legacy hunters, and I confider the " world as made for me, not me for the world: It is my maxim therefore to enjoy it while I can, and e let futurity shift for itself."-While he thus indulged his own talkative vein, and at the same time, no doubt, expected a retaliation from me; a young man entered dreffed in black velvet and an enormous tye-wig, with an air in which natural levity and affected folemnity were to jumbled together,

ther, that on the whole he appeared a burlesque on all decorum. This ridiculous oddity danced up to the table at which we fat, and after a thousand grimaces, asked my friend, by the name of Mr. Medlar, if we were not engaged upon bufinefs .- My companion put on a furly countenance, and replied, " No " great bufiness, doctor-but however."-" O! then " (cried the physician) I must beg your indulgence a " little, pray pardon me, gentlemen. - Sir (faid he, " addreffing himfelf to me) your most humble fer-" vant, I hope you will forgive me, Sir-I must beg "the favour to fit-Sir-Sir I have fomething of " consequence to impart to my friend Mr. Medlar-" Sir, I hope you will excuse my freedom in whis-" pering, Sir."-Before I had time to give this complaisant person my permission, Mr. Medlar cried, " I'll have no whifpering—if you have any thing to " fay to me, speak with an audible voice." --- The doctor feemed a little disconcerted at this exclamation, and turning again to me, made a thousand apologies for pretending to make mystery of any thing, a piece of caution which he faid was owing to his ignorance of my connexion with Mr. Medlar; but now he understood I was a friend, he would communicate what he had to fay, in my hearing.—He then began, after two or three hems, in this manner:-"You must know, Sir, I am just come from dinner " at my lady Flareit's, (then addressing himself to-" me) a lady of quality, Sir, at whose table I have " the honour of dining fometimes. There was " lady Stately and my lady Larum, and Mrs. Dainty, 44 and Miss Biddy Gigler, upon my word, a very 66 good-natured young lady, with a very pretty for-"tune, Sir .- There were also my lord Straddle,, " Sir John Shrug, and master Billy Chatter, who " is actually a very acetious young gentleman. "So, Sir, her ladyship seeing me excessively faes tigued, for she was the last of fifteen patients E 6 « (people " (people of distinction, Sir) whom I had visited this forenoon, - infifted upon my flaying dinner, " though upon my word, I protest I had no appe-"tite; however, in compliance with her ladyfhip's er request, Sir, I sat down, and the convertation " turning on different subjects, among other things, 66 Mr. Chatter asked very earnestly when I saw Mr. " Medlar .- I told him I had not had the pleasure of " feeing you these nineteen hours and a half; for " you may remember, Sir, it was nearly about that time; I won't be positive as to a minute"-" No! (says he) then I desire you will go to his " lodgings immediately after dinner, and fee what's " the matter with him, for he must certainly be very so bad from having eat last night such a vast quantity " of raw oysters."-The crusty gentleman, who, from the folemnity of his delivery, expected fomething extraordinary, no fooner heard his conclusion, than he started up in a testy humour, crying, "Pshaw, " pshaw! d-n your oysters;" and walked away after a short compliment of, "Your servant, Sir," to me. The doctor got up also, saying, " I vow and protest, " upon my word, I am actually amazed," and followed Mr. Medlar to the bar, which was hard by, where he was paying for his coffee; there he whifpered fo loud, that I could overhear, " Pray, who is this gentleman?"—His friend replied haftily, " I might have known that before now, if it had not been for your impertinent intrusion," and walked off very much disappointed. The ceremonious phyfician returned immediately and fat down by me, alking a thousand pardons for leaving me alone; and giving me to understand that what he had communicated to Mr. Medlar at the bar was an affair of the last importance, that would admit of no delay. He then called for some coffee, and launched out into the virtues of that berry, which, he faid, in coid phlegmatic conflicutions, like his, dried up the superfluous moifture, ture, and braced the relaxed nerves. He told me it was utterly unknown to the ancients; and derived its name from an Arabian word, which I might eafily perceive by the found and termination. From this topic he transferred his disquisitions to the verb arink, which he affirmed, was improperly applied to the taking of coffee, in as much as people did not drink, but fip or fipple that liquor; that the genuine meaning of drinking is to quench one's thirst, or commit a debauch by swallowing wine; that the Latin word, which conveyed the same idea, was bibere or potare, and that of the Greeks pinein or poteein, tho' he was apt to believe they were differently used on different occasions. For example: to drink a vast quantity, or, as the vulgar express it, to drink an ocean of liquor, was in Latin potare, and in Greek poteein; and on the other hand, to use it moderately, was bibere and pinein; that this was only a conjecture of his own, which however, feemed to be supported by the word bibulous, which is particularly applied to the pores of the skin, that can only drink a very small quantity of the circumambient moisture, by reason of the smallness of their diameters, whereas, from the verb poteein, is derived the substantive potamos, which fignifies a river, or vast quantity of liquor .- I could not help fimiling at this learned and important investigation; and to recommend myfelf the more to my new acquaintance, whose dispofition I was by this time well informed of, I observed, that what he alleged did not, to the best of my remembrance, appear in the writings of the ancients; for Horace uses the words poto and bibo indifferently for the same purpose, as in the twentieth Ode of his first Book.

Vile potabis modicis fabinum cantharis,—
Et prælo domitam caleno tu bibes uvam.

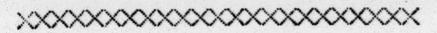
That I had never heard of the verb poteein, but that potamos, potema, and potos, were derived from pino, poso, pepoka; in consequence of which the Greek poets never use any other word for sestal drinking.—Homer describes Nestor at his cups in these words:

Nestora d'ouk elathen jache pinonta perempes.

And Anacreon mentions it on the fame occasion almost in every page,

Pinonti de oinon hedun Otan pino ton oinon. Opliz' ego de pino.

And in a thousand other places .- The doctor, who, doubtless, intended by his criticism, to give me a high idea of his erudition, was infinitely furprised to find himself schooled by one of my appearance; and after a confiderable pause, cried, "Upon my word! you " are in the right, Sir-I find I have not confidered "this affair with my usual accuracy."-Then accosting me, in Latin, which he spoke very well, the conversation was maintained full two hours, on a variety of subjects, in that language; and indeed, he spoke so judiciously, that I was convinced, notwithstanding his whimfical appearance, and attention to trifles, that he was a man of extensive knowledge, especially in books; he looked upon me, as I afterwards understood from Mr. Medlar, as a prodigy in learning, and proposed that very night, if I was not engaged, to introduce me to several young gentlemen of fortune and fashion, with whom he had an appointment at the Bedford coffee-house.



CHAP. XLVI.

Wagtail introduces me to a set of fine gentlemen, with whom I spend the evening at a tavern—our conversation—the characters of my new companions—the doctor is roasted—the issue of our debauch.

I Accepted his offer with pleasure, and we went thither in a hackney coach, where I saw a great number of gay figures fluttering about, most of whom spoke to the doctor with great familiarity. Among the rest stood a groupe of them around the fire, whom I immediately knew to be the very persons who had the night before, by their laughing, alarmed my fufpicion of the lady who had put herself under my protection .- They no fooner perceived me enter with Dr. Wagtail (for that was my companion's name) than they tittered and whispered one to another; and I was not a little furprised to find that they were the gentlemen to whole acquaintance he defigned to recommend me; for when he observed them together, he told me who they were, and defired to know by what name he should introduce me. I satisfied him in that particular, and he advanced with great gravity, faying, "Gentlemen, your most obedient-give " me leave to introduce my friend Mr. Random to " your fociety." Then turning to me, " Mr. Ran-" dom, this is Mr. Bragwell-Mr. Banter, Sir-" Mr. Chatter-my friend Mr. Slyboot, and Mr. "Ranter, Sir."-I faluted each of them in order, and when I came to take Mr. Slyboot by the hand, I perceived him thrust his tongue in his cheek, to the no small entertainment of the company; but I did not think proper to take any notice of it, on this occasion. Mr:

6

Mr. Ranter too (who I afterwards learned was a player) displayed his talents, by mimicking my air. features, and voice, while he returned my compliment: - This feat I should not have been so sensible of, had I not feen him behave in the fame manner to my friend Wagtail, when he made up to them at first. -But for once I let him enjoy the fruits of his dex. terity without question or controul, resolved, however, to chaftife his infolence at a more convenient opportunity-Mr. Slyboot gueffing I was a stranger, asked if I had been lately in France? and when I answered in the affirmative, enquired if I had feen the Luxembourg gallery? I told him I had confidered it more than once, with great attention: Upon this a conversation ensued, in which I discovered him to be a painter .- While we were discoursing upon the particulars of this famous performance, I overheard Banter ask Dr. Wagtail, where he had picked up this Mr. Random - To which question the phyfician answered, "Upon my word, a mighty pretty " fort of a gentleman-a man of fortune, Sir,-he " has made the grand tour, and feen the best comes pany in Europe, Sir."-" What, he told you so? 46 I suppose, (said the other) I take him to be neither " more nor less than a French valet de chambre."-"Oh! barbarous, barbarous! (cried the doctor) this is actually, upon my word, altogether unaccountable.—I know all his family perfectly well, of Sir; he's of the Randoms of the north -a very " ancient house, Sir, and a distant relation of mine." - I was extremely nettled at the conjecture of Mr. Banter, and began to entertain a very indifferent opinion of my company in general; but as I might poffibly by their means acquire a more extensive and agreeable acquaintance, I determined to bear these little mortifications as long as I could, without injuring the dignity of my character .- After having talked for some time on the weather, plays, politics, and

and other coffee house subjects, it was proposed that we should spend the evening at a noted tavern in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired in a body.-Having taken possession of a room, called for French wine, and bespoke supper, the glass went about pretty freely, and the characters of my affociates opened upon me more and more.—It foon appeared that the doctor was entertained as a butt for the painter and player to exercise their wit upon, for the diversion of the company. Mr. Ranter began the game, by asking him what was good for a hoarseness, lowness of spirits and indigestion, for he was troubled with all these complaints to a very great degree. Wagtail immediately undertook to explain the nature of his cafe, and in a very prolix manner harangued upon prognostics, diagnostics, symptomatics, therapeutics, inanition, and repletion; then calculated the force of the stomach and lungs in their respective operations; ascribed the player's malady to a disorder in these organs, proceeding from hard drinking and vociferation, and prescribed a course of stomachies, with abstinence from venery, wine, and loud speaking, laughing, finging, coughing, fneezing, or hollowing .- " Pah, Pah, (cried Ranter interrupting " him) the remedy is worse than the disease-I wish "I knew where to find fome tinder water."-" Tinder-water! (said the doctor) upon my word I don't " apprehend you, Mr. Ranter."-" Water extracted " from tinder, (replied the other) an universal speci-" fic for all diftempers incident to man. It was in-" vented by a learned German monk, who, for a " valuable confideration, imparted the secret to Pa-" racelfus." " Pardon me (cried the painter) it was " first used by Solomon, as appears by a Greek ma-" nufcript, in his own hand-writing, lately found at the foot of mount Lebanon, by a peafant who was digging for potatoes." "Well, (faid Wag-66 tail) in all my vast reading, I never met with fuch a preparation! neither did I know till this minute, that Solomon understood Greek, or that potatoes " grew in Palestine."-Here Banter interpoled, faying he was furprifed that doctor Wagtail should make the least doubt of Solomon's understanding Greek, when he is represented to us as the wiscft and best educated prince in the world; and as for potatoes, they were transplanted thither from Ireland, in the time of the Crusades, by some knights of that country.- " I profes (said the doctor) there is no-" thing more likely-I would actually give a vaft " fum for a fight of that manuscript, which must be " inestimable --- And if I understood the process, would fet about it immediately."-The player affured him, the process was very simple—that he must cram a hundred weight of dry tinder into a glass retort, and distilling it by the force of animal heat, it would yield half a scruple of insipid water, one drop of which is a full dose. - " Upon my integrity! (exclaimed the credulous doctor) this is very amazing! and extraordinary! that a caput mortuum shall yield any water at all-I must own I have always been an enemy to specifics, which I thought inconsistent with the nature of the animal economy; but certainly the authority of Solomon is not to be quef-" tioned .- I wonder where I shall find a glass retort " large enough to contain fuch a vast quantity of " tinder, the consumption of which must undoubtec edly raise the price of paper-or where I shall find " animal heat sufficient, even to warm such a mass." Slyboot informed him, that he might have a retort blown for him as big as a church; and that the easiest method of raising the vapour by animal heat, would be to place it in the middle of an infirmary for feverish patients, who might lie upon matrasses around, and in contact with it .- He had no fooner pronounced these words, than Wagtail exclaimed, in a rapture, " An admirable expedient, as I hope to 66 be

be faved! I will positively put it in practice."-This fimplicity of the phytician furnished excellent diversion for the company, who, in their turns, fneered at him in ironical compliments, which his vanity fwallowed as the genuine fentiments of their hearts. -Mr. Chatter, impatient of fo long a filence, now broke out, and entertained us with a catalogue of all the people who danced at the last Hampstead assembly, with a most circumstantial account of the dress and ornaments of each, from the lappets of the ladies to the shoe-buckles of the men; concluding with telling Bragwell, that his mistress Melinda was there, and feemed to miss him; and foliciting his company at the next occasion of that kind .- " No, no, " damme (faid Bragwell) I have something else to " mind than dangling after a parcel of giddy-headed " girls; belides, you know my temper is fo unruly, " that I am apt to involve myself in scrapes, when " a woman is concerned. The last time I was there, "I had an affair with Tom Trippet."-" O! I re-" member that (cried Banter;) you lugged out before " the ladies; and I commend you for fo doing, because you had an opportunity of shewing your " manhood without running any risk."-" Risk! " (faid the other with a fierce countenance) damn " my blood! I fear no risks. I an't afraid of lugging " out against any man that wears a head, damme! "tis well known I have drawn blood more than " once, and loft fome too; but what does that fig-" nify?" The player begged this champion to employ him as his fecond the next time he intended to kill, for he wanted to fee a man die of a stab, that he might know how to act fuch a part the more naturally on the stage.—" Die! (replied the hero:) " No, by God! I know better things than to incur " the verdict of a Middlesex jury-- I should look upon " my fencing-mafter to be an ignorant fon of a bitch, " if he had not taught me to prick any part of my " antagonist's " antagonist's body, that I please to disable."-. Oho! (cried Slyboot) if that be the case, I have ss a favour to ask: You must know I am employed " to paint a Jesus on the cross; and my purpose is to es represent him at that point of time when the spear " is thrust into his fide. - Now I should be glad you would, in my presence, pink some impertinent " fellow into convulfions, without endangering his " life, that I may have an opportunity of taking a " good clever agony from nature: - The doctor will " direct you where to enter, and how far to go; 66 but pray let it be as near the left side as possible." Wagtail, who took this propofal feriously, observed, that it would be a very difficult matter to penetrate into the left fide of the thorax, without hurting the heart, and of consequence killing the patient; but he believed it was possible for a man of a very nice hand, and exact knowledge of anatomy, to wound the diaphragma somewhere about the skirts, which might induce a firgultus, without being attended with death; that he was ready to demonstrate the infertion of the muscle to Mr. Bragwell; but defired to have no concern with the experiment, which might effentially prejudice his reputation, in case of a miscarriage.—Bragwell was as much imposed upon by the painter's waggery as the doctor, and declined engaging in the affair, faying, he had a very great regard for Mr. Slyboot, but had laid it down as a maxim, never to fight except when his honour was engaged .- A thousand jokes of this kind were utered; the wine circulated, supper was served in, we ate heartily, returned to the bottle, Bragwell became noify and troublesome, Banter grew more and more severe, Ranter rehearsed, Slyboot made faces at the whole company, I fung French catches, and Chatter kissed me with great affection; while the doctor, with a woful countenance, fat filent like a disciple of Pythagoras.—At length, it was proposed by Bragwell, that

that we should scour the hundreds, sweat the constable, maul the watch, and then reel soberly to bed.

While we deliberated on this expedition, the waiter came into the room, and asked for doctor Wagtail; when he understood he was present, he told him there was a lady below to enquire for him; at which message the physician started from his melancholy contemplation, and with a look of extreme confusion. affured the company, he could not possibly be the person wanted, for he had no connexion with any lady whatever; and bade the drawer tell her fo. " For shame! (cried Banter) would you be so imof polite as to refuse a lady the hearing? perhaps she comes for a confultation. - It must be some extra-" ordinary affair that brings a lady to a tavern at this time o'night. --- Mr. Ranter, pray do the doctor's baife-mains to the lady, and fquire her of hither."-The player immediately flaggered out, and returned, leading in with much ceremony, a tall strapping wench, whose appearance proclaimed her occupation. We received her with the utmost folemnity, and with a good deal of intreaty the was perfuaded to fit, when a profound filence enfued, during which she fixed her eyes, with a disconsolate look, upon the doctor, who was utterly confounded at her behaviour, and returned her melancholy fourfold; at length, after a good many piteous fighs, she wiped her eyes and accosted him thus: " What! " not one word of comfort? Will nothing foften 46 that stony heart of thine? Not all my tears! not " all my affliction! Not the inevitable ruin thou " haft brought upon me! Where are thy vows, thou " faithless perjured man?—Hast thou no honour?— " no conscience-no remorse for thy perfidious con-" duct towards me !- Answer me, wilt thou at last " do me justice, or must I have recourse to heaven " or hell for my revenge!" -- If poor Wagtail was amazed before the tpoke, what must his confusion be on hearing this address! His natural paleness changed into a ghaftly clay colour, his eyes rolled, his lip trembled, and he answered in an accent not to be described; - " Upon my word, honour, and falvation! madam, you are actually mistaken in my person.-I have a most particular veneration for of your fex, and am actually incapable of injuring any lady in the smallest degree, madam; -besides, er madam, to the best of my recollection, I never had " the honour of seeing you before, as I hope to be " faved, madam!"-" How, traitor! (cried she) " dost thou disown me then? - Mistaken! no, too " well I know that fair bewitching face! too well I " know that false enchanting tongue !- Alas ! gen-"tlemen, fince the villain compels me, by his un-" kindness, to expose myself and him, know that this "betrayer, under the specious pretence of honour-" able addresses, won my heart, and taking advantage of his conquest, robbed me of my virgin-treasure, " and afterwards abandoned me to my fate! I am " now four months gone with child by him, turned " out of doors by my relations, and left a prey to " misery and want! Yes, thou barbarian, (said she, turning to Wagtail) thou tiger, thou succubus! " too well thou knowest my situation-but I will tear out thy faithless heart, and deliver the world " from fuch a monster." - So faying, the sprung forward at the doctor, who, with incredible agility, jumped over the table, and ran behind Bragwell, while the rest of us endeavoured to appeale the furious heroine-Although every body in the company affected the utmost surprise, I could easily perceive, it was a scheme concerted among them to produce diversion at the doctor's expence; and being under no concern about the confequence, I entered into the confederacy, and enjoyed the diffress of Wagtail, who, with tears in his eyes, begged the protection of the company, declaring himfelf as innocent

cent of the crime laid to his charge, as the fœtus in utero; and hinting, at the fame time, that nature had not put it in his power to be guilty of fuch a trespass-" Nature! (cried the lady) there was no " nature in the case—he abused me by the help of " charms and spells; else how is it possible, that any " woman could have liftened to the addresses of such " a scare-crow?—Were these owlish eyes made for " ogling; that carrion complexion to be admired; or that mouth like a horse-shoe to be kissed? No. " no, you owe your fuccess to your philtres, to your of drugs and incantations; and not to your natural " talents, which are in every respect mean and con-" temptible."-The doctor now thought he had got an opportunity of vindicating himself effectually; and defired the complainant to compose herself but for half an hour, in which he undertook to prove the abfurdity of believing in the power of incantations, which were only idle dreams of ignorance and superstition.—He accordingly pronounced a very learned discourse upon the nature of ideas, the powers and independence of the mind, the properties of stimulating medicines, the difference between a proneness to venery, which many simples would create, and a paffion limited to one object, which can only be the refult of fense and reflection; and concluded with a pathetic remonstrance, fetting forth his unhappiness in being persecuted with the resentment of a lady whom he had never injured, nor even feen before that occasion, and whose faculties were, in all likelihood, fo much impaired by her misfortunes, that an innocent person was in danger of being ruined by her disorder.—He had no sooner finished his harangue, than the forlorn princess renewed her lamentations, and cautioned the company against his eloquence, which, she said, was able to biass the most impartial bench in Christendom. -Banter advited him to espouse her immediately, as the only only means to falve his reputation, and offered to accompany him to the Fleet for that purpose; but Slyboot proposed that a father should be purchased for the child, and a comfortable alimony fettled on the mother. Ranter promised to adopt the infant gratis. Wagtail was ready to worship him for his generofity; and though he perfitted in protesting his innocence, condescended to every thing rather than his unblemished character should be called in question. The lady rejected the proposal, and insisted on matrimony. Bragwell took up the cudgels for the doctor. and undertook to rid him of her importunity for half a guinea; upon which Wagtail, with great eagerness, pulled out his purfe and put it into the hand of his friend, who taking half a piece out of it, gave it to the plaintiff, and bade her thank God for her good fortune. When the had received this bounty, the affected to weep, and begged, fince the phyfician had renounced her, he would at least vouchfafe her a parting kis; this he was prevailed upon to grant, with great reluctance, and went up with his usual folemnity, to falute her; when she laid hold of his cheek with her teeth, and held fast, while he roared with anguish, to the unspeakable diversion of all present. When she thought proper to release him, she dropped a low curtfey to the company, and quitted the room, leaving the doctor in the utmost horror, not so much on account of the pain, as the apprehension of the consequence of the bite; for by this time he was convinced of her being mad. Banter prescribed the actual cautery, and put the poker in the fire to be heated, in order to fear the place.—The player was of opinion that Bragwell should scoop out the part affected with the point of his fword; but the painter prevented both these dreadful operations, by recommending a balfam he had in his pocket, which never failed to cure the bite of a mad dog: So faying, he pulled out a small bladder of black paint; with which he instantly anointed

66 fore

anointed not only the fore, but the greatest part of the patient's face, and left it in a frightful condition.

—In short, the poor creature was so harassed with fear and vexation, that I pitied him extremely, and fent him home in a chair, contrary to the inclination

of every body present.

VOL. II.

This freedom of mine gave umbrage to Bragwell, who testified his displeasure, by swearing a few threats. without making any application, which being perceived by Slyboot, who fat by me, he, with a view of promoting a quarrel, whispered to me, that he thought Bragwell used me very ill; but every man was the best judge of his own affairs .- I answered aloud, that I would neither fuffer Mr. Bragwell nor him to use me ill with impunity; and that I flood in no need of his counsel in regard to the regulation of my conduct.—He thought proper to ask a thousand pardons, and affure me, he meant no offence; while Bragwell feigned himself asleep, that he might not be obliged to take notice of what passed. -But the player, who had more animal spirits, and less discretion than Slyboot, unwilling to let the affair rest, where he had dropt it, jogged Mr. Bragwell, and told him foftly, that I called him names, and threatened to cudgel him.—This particular I underflood by his flarting up and crying, " Blood and " wounds! you lie--- No man durst treat me so ignomi-" nioufly.—Mr. Random, did you call me names, and " threaten to drub me?" I denied the imputation, and proposed to punish the scoundrel, who endeavoured to foment diffurbance in the company; Bragwell fignified his approbation, and drew his fword; I did the fame, and accossed the actor in these words, "Looke, " Mr. Ranter, I know you posses all the mimickry " and mischievous qualities of an ape, because I " have observed you put them all in practice more than once to-night, on me and others; now I want to 66 fee if you refemble one in nimbleness also; there-

of fore I defire you to leap over this fword without " hefitation." So faying, I held it parallel to the horizon, at the distance of about three seet from the floor, and called, "Once-twice---thrice, and away;" --but instead of complying with my command, he fnatched his hat and hanger, and affuming the looks, fwagger, and phrase of Pistol, burst out in the following exclamation, " Ha! must I then perform ine glorious prank, of sylvan ape in mountain forest caught! Death rock me afleep, abridge my doleful ed days, and lay my hand in fury's lap.—Have we of not Hiren here?"-This buffoonery did not anfwer his expectation, for by this time the company was bent on feeing him in a new character. Mr. Banter defired me to hold my fword a foot or two higher, that he might have the better opportunity of exerting himself .--- The painter told him, if he performed well, he would recommend him as a vaulter to the proprietors of Sadler's-wells; and Bragwell crying, "Leap for the king," applied the point of his fword to the player's posteriors, with such succefs, that he fprung over in a trice, and finding the door unguarded, vanished in a twinkling; glad, no doubt, of having paid his share of the reckoning so eafily.

It being now near two o'clock in the morning, we discharged the bill, and sallied out into the street.

---The painter slunk away without taking his leave.

Billy Chatter, being unable to speak or stand, was sent to a bagnio; and Banter and I accompanied Bragwell to Moll King's coffee-house, where, after he had kicked half a dozen of hungry whores, we lest him asseep on a bench, and directed our course towards Charing Cross, near which place both he and

I lodged.

The natural dryness of my companion being overcome by liquor, he honoured me by the way with many compliments and professions of friendship, for which which I made fuitable acknowledgments, and told him, I thought myself happy in having, by my behaviour, removed the unfavourable opinion he entertained of me at first fight.——He was surprised at this declaration, and begged me to explain myself: Upon which I mentioned what I had over-heard him say of me to Wagtail in the coffee-house.——He laughed, and made an apology for his freedom, assuring me, that my appearance had very much preposelsed him in my savour; and what he said, was only intended as a joke on the doctor's solemnity.——I was highly pleased at being undeceived in this particular, and not a little proud of the good opinion of this wit, who shook me by the hand at parting, and promised to meet me next day at the ordinary.



CHAP. XLVII.

Strap communicates to me a conquest he had made of a chandler's widow---finds himself miserably mistaken—I go to the opera—admire Melinda—am cautioned by Banter—go to the assembly at Hampstead—dance with that young lady—receive an insolent message from Bragwell, whose metal is soon cooled—am in favour with my mistress, whom I visit next day; and am bubbled out of eighteen guineas at cards—Strap triumphs at my success, but is astonished at my expence—---Banter comes to my lodging, is very sarcastic at my expence, and borrows five guineas from me, as a proof of his friendship.

In the morning before I got up, Strap came into my chamber, and finding me awake, hemmed feveral times, scratched his head, cast his eyes upon the ground, and with a very soolish kind of simper upon his face, gave me to understand he had something to communicate.--- By your countenance (said I) I expect to hear good tidings."— Indisferent (resplied he, tittering) that is, hereafter as it shall be.—You must know, I have some thoughts of altering my condition."— What! (cried I, assorting his amatrimonial scheme? O rare Strap! thou hast got the heels of me at last."— "N'—no less, I assure you (said he, bursting into a laugh of self-approbation); a tallow-chandler's widow, that lives hard by, has taken a liking to me.—A

" fine jolly dame, as plump as a partridge. - She has " a well furnished house, a brisk trade, and a good " deal of the ready. - I may have her for the asking. " She told a friend of mine, a brother footman, that " fhe would take me out of a flinking clout. - But " I refused to give my final answer, till I knew your " opinion of the matter."-I congratulated Monfieur d'Estrapes upon his conquest, and approved of the fcheme, provided he could be affured of those circumstances of her fortune; but advised him to do nothing rashly, and give me an opportunity of feeing the lady before matters should be brought to a conclusion. He affured me he would do nothing without my confent and approbation, and that very morning, while I was at breakfast, introduced his inamorata to my acquaintance. - She was a short thick woman, about the age of thirty-fix, and had a particular prominence of belly, which I perceived at first fight, not without some suspicion of foul play.—I defired her, however, to fit, and treated her with a dish of tea; the discourse turning on the good qualities of Strap, whom I represented as a prodigy of fobriety, industry, and virtue.-When she took her leave, he followed her to the door, and returned licking his lips, and asking if I did not think she was a luscious creature. - I made no mystery of my apprehension, but declared my sentiments of her without referve; at which he was not furprifed, telling me, he had observed the same symptom, but was informed by his friend that she was only livergrown, and would in a few months be as small in the waist as ever. - "Yes (faid I) a few weeks, I believe, will " do the business.—In short, Strap, it is my opinion, " that you are egregiously imposed upon; and that " this friend is no other than a rascal who wants to ee palm his trull upon you for a wife, that he may at " once deliver himself from the importunities of the " mother, and the expence of her bantling; for which F 3

" reason I would not have you trust implicitly to the report he makes of her wealth, which is incon-" fistent with his behaviour; nor run your head pre-" cipitately into a noofe, that you may afterwards " wish exchanged for the hangman's." He seemed very much startled at my infinuation, and promised to look twice before he leaped; faying, with fome heat, "Odds, if I find his intention is to betray me, " we shall see which of us is the better man."-My prediction was verified in less than a fortnight; her great belly producing an infant, to the unspeakable amazement of Strap, who was, before this happened, inclinable to believe I had refined a little too much in my penetration. His false friend disappeared, and in a few days after an execution was issued against her goods and houshold-furniture, which were seized by the creditors.

Mean while I met my friend Banter at the ordinary, and in the evening went to the opera with him and Mr. Chatter, who pointed out Melinda in one of the boxes, and offered to introduce me to her, obferving at the same time, that she was a reigning toast worth ten thousand pounds.—This piece of information made my heart bound with joy, and I difcovered great eagerness to accept the proposal; upon which he affured me I should dance with her at the next affembly, if he had any influence in that quarter; fo faying he went round, spoke to her some minutes, and as I imagined, pointed at me; then returning, told me, to my inexpressible pleasure, that I might depend upon what he had promised, for she was now engaged as my partner.-Banter, in a whisper, gave me to understand, that she was an incorrigible coquette, who would grant the same favour to any young fellow in England, of a tolerable appearance, merely to engage him among the herd of her admirers, that she might have the pleasure of seeing them daily encrease; -that the was of a cold infenfible

fensible disposition, dead to every passion but vanity, and so blind to merit, that he would lay any wager, the wealthiest sool should carry her at last. I attributed a good deal of this intelligence to the satirical turn of my stiend, or resentment, for having himself suffered a rebuff from the lady in question; and at any rate, trusted so much to my own accomplishments, as to believe no woman could resist the ardour

of my addresses.

Fuli of this confidence I repaired to Hampstead. in company with Billy Chatter, my Lord Hobble, and doctor Wagtail .- There I saw a very brilliant affembly, before whom I had the honour to walk a minute with Melinda, who charmed me with her frank manner and eafiness of behaviour .- Before the country dances began, I received a message by a person I did not know, from Bagwell, who was prefent, importing, that nobody who knew him, prefumed to dance with Melinda, while he was there in person; and that I would do well to relinquish her without noise, because he had a mind to lead up a country dance with her. This extraordinary intimation, which was delivered in the lady's hearing, did not at all discompose me, who by this time was pretty well acquainted with the character of my rival. I therefore, without the least symptom of concern, bade the gentleman tell Mr. Bragwell, that fince I was so happy as to obtain the lady's consent, I should not be folicitous about his; and defired the bearer himself to bring me no such impertinent messages for the future. Melinda affected a fort of confusion, and pretended to wonder that Mr. Bragwell should give himself such liberties with regard to her, who had no manner of connection with the fellow. I laid hold of this opportunity to display my valour, and offered to call him to an account for his infolence, a propofal which fhe absolutely refused, under pretence of consulting my fafety; though I could perceive by the sparkling of her her eyes, that she would not have thought herself affronted in being the subject of a duel. I was by no means pleased with this discovery of her thoughts, which not only argued the most unjustifiable vanity, but likewise the most barbarous indifference; however, I was allured by her fortune, and resolved to gratify her pride, in making her the occasion of a public quarrel between me and Bragwell, who, I was pretty certain, would never drive matters to a dan-

gerous extremity.

While we danced together, I observed this formidable rival at one end of the room, encircled with a cluster of beaus, to whom he talked with great vehemence, casting many big looks at me, from time to time: I gueffed the subject of his discourse, and as foon as I had handed my partner to her feat, strutted up to the place where he flood, and cocking my hat in his face, demanded aloud, if he had any thing to fay to me. He answered with a sullen tone, " Nothing at prefent, Sir." And turned about upon his heel .- "Well, (faid I) you know where I am to " be found at any time."—His companions stared at one another, and I returned to the lady, whose features brightened at my approach, and immediately a whisper run through the whole room; after which fo many eyes were turned upon me, that I was ready to fink with confusion. - When the ball broke up, I led her to her coach, and, like a true French gallant, would have got up behind it, in order to protect her from violence on the road; but she absolutely resused my offer, and expressed her concern that there was not an empty feat for me within the vehicle.

Next day in the afternoon I waited on her at her lodgings, by permission, in company with Chatter, and was very civilly received by her mother, with whom she lived; there were a good many fashionable people present, chiefly young fellows, and immediately after tea a couple of card tables were set, at

one of which I had the honour to play with Melinda, who in less than three hours made shift to plunder me of eight guineas.—I was well enough content to lofe a little money with a good grace, that I might have an opportunity in the mean time to fay foft things, which are still most welcome, when attended with good luck; but I was by no means fatisfied of her fair play, a circumstance that shocked me not a little, and greatly impaired my opinion of her difinterestedness and delicacy.-However, I was refolved to profit by this behaviour, and treat her in my turn with less ceremony; accordingly, I laid close siege to her, and finding her not at all difgusted with the gross incense I offered, that very night made a declaration of love in plain terms.—She received my addreffes with great gaiety, and pretended to laugh them off, but at the same time treated me with such particular complacency, that I was perfuaded I had made a conquest of her heart, and concluded myself the happiest man alive. - Elevated with these flattering ideas, I fat down again to cards, after supper, and with great chearfulness suffered myself to be cheated of ten guineas more.

It was late before I took my leave, after being favoured with a general invitation; and when I got into bed, the adventures of the day hindered me from sleeping.—Sometimes I pleased myself with the hopes of possessing a fine woman with ten thousand pounds; then I would ruminate on the character I had heard of her from Banter, and compare it with the circumstances of her conduct towards me, which seemed to bear too great a resemblance to the picture he had drawn.—This introduced a melancholy restection on the expence I had undergone, and the smallness of my sunds to support it, which, by the bye, were none of my own—In short, I sound myself involved in doubts and perplexities, that kept me awake the greatest part of the night.

F 5

In the morning, Strap, with whom I had not conversed for two days, presented himself with the utenfils for shaving me; upon which, I asked his opinion of the lady whom he had feen me conduct to her coach at Hampstead. - "Odd! she's a delicious " creature, cried he, and, as I am informed, a great " fortune.- I am forry you did not infift on going " home with her. I dare fay, she would not have refused your company; for she seems to be a good-"humoured foul." -- "There's a time for all " things, faid I. You must know, Strap, I was in " company with her till one o'clock this morning." -I had no fooner pronounced these words, than he began to caper about the room, and snap his fingers, crying in a transport, " The day's our own !- the " day's our own!" I gave him to understand that his triumph was a little premature, and that I had more difficulties to furmount that he was aware of; then I recounted to him the intelligence I had received from Banter .- At which he changed colour, shook his head, and observed there was no faith in woman, ---I told him, I was refolved to make a bold push notwithstanding, although I foresaw it would lead me into a great expence; and bade him guess the sum I had loft last night at cards.—He scratched his chin, and profesied his abhorrence of cards, the very name of which being mentioned made him fweat with vexation, as it recalled the money-dropper to his remembrance; "But however (faid he) you have to do with other-guess people now. Why, I suppose " if you had a bad run last night, you would scarce come off for less than ten or twelve shillings."-I was mortified at this piece of fimplicity, which I imagined, at that time, was all affected by way of reprimand for my folly; and asked with some heat, if he thought I fpent the evening in a cellar with chairmen and bunters; giving him to know, at the fame time, that my expence had amounted to eighteen guineas.

guineas .- It would require the pencil of Hogarth to express the astonishment and concern of Strap, onhearing this piece of news; the bason in which he was preparing the lather for my chin, dropped out of his hands, and he remained fome time immoveable in that ludicrous attitude, with his mouth open and his eyes thrust forward considerably beyond their station; but remembering my disposition, which was touchy and impatient of controul, he smothered his chagrin, and attempted to recolled himself .- With this view he endeavoured to laugh, but in spite of his teeth, broke out into a whimper, took up his wash-ball and pewter-pot, scrubbed my beard with the one, and difcharged the other upon my face. - I took no notice of his confusion, but after he had fully recovered himfelf, put him in mind of his right, and affured him of my readiness to surrender his effects whenever he flould think proper to demand them.-He was nettled at my infinuation, which he thought proceeded from my distrust of his friendship; and begged I would never talk to him in that strain again, unless I had a mind to break his heart.

This good creature's unalterable friendship for me affected me with the most grateful sentiments, and acted as a spur to my resolution of acquiring a fortune, that I might have it in my power to manifest my generosity in my turn.—For this purpose, I determined to bring matters to a speedy conclusion with Melinda; well knowing that a few such nights as the last, would esseably incapacitate me from prosecuting that, or any other advantageous amour.

While my meditation was busied in planning out my suture conduct, Mr. Banter savoured me with a visit; and after breakfast, asked how I had passed the preceding evening.—I answered, I was very agreeably entertained at a private house.—"Yes, (said he with a sarcastic smile) you deserved something extraordinary for the price you paid."—

F 6 1 was

I was furprifed at this remark, and pretended ignorance of his meaning.-" Come, come, Random, (continued he) you need not make a myftery of it to me, the whole town has it. - I wish that foolish " affair between you and Bragwell at Hampstead had been less public. - It has set all the busy bodies " at work to find out your real character and " fituation; and you cannot imagine what conjectures have already circulated at your expence. " One suspects you to be a Jesuit in disguise; another thinks you are an agent from the Pretender; " a third believes you to be an upftart gamester. " because no body knows any thing of your family or fortune; a fourth is of opinion, that you are an " Irish fortune hunter." This last hypothesis touched me fo nearly, that to conceal my confusion, I was fain to interrupt his detail, and damn the world for an envious meddling community, that would not fuffer a gentleman to live without moleftation. He took no notice of this apostrophe, but went on, "For my own part, I neither know, nor " delire to know, who, or what you are; this I am certain of, that few people make a mystery of their origin or fituation, who can boast of any thing 46 advantageous in either; and my own opinion " of the matter is, that you have raifed yourfelf by " your industry, from nothing to the appearance " you now maintain, and which you endeavour to " fupport by fome matrimonial scheme."-Here he fixed his eyes fledfaftly upon me, and perceiving my face covered with blushes, told me, now he was confirmed in his opinion; -- "Look ye, Random, " (faid he) I have divined your plan, and am confident it will never succeed .- You are too honest " and too ignorant of the town, to practife the neceffary cheats of your profession, and detect the " conspiracies that will be formed against you. -" Befides you are downright bashful-what the es devil !

devil I set up for a fortune-hunter before you have conquered the fense of shame! -- Perhaps you are entitled by your merit, and I believe you are, to a richer and better wife than Melinda; but " take my word for it, she is not to be won at that rate; --- or, if you are so lucky as to carry her, between you and me, you may fay as Teague did, " By my foul I have gained a loss! She would take care to spend her fortune in a twinkling, and soon " make you fick of her extravagance." — I was alarmed by his discourse, while I resented the freedom of it, and expressed my disgust, by telling him, he was mistaken in my intentions, and desiring he would give me leave to regulate my conduct according to the dictates of my own reason.—He made an apology for the liberty he had taken, and ascribed it to the warmth of his friendship for me; as an uncommon instance of which, he borrowed five guineas, affuring me, there were very few people in the world whom he would fo far favour with his confidence. - I gave him the money, and professed myself so well convinced of his fincerity, that he had no occafion to put it to fuch extraordinary proofs for the future. -- "I thought (faid he) to have asked five " pieces more, but hearing you was bubbled of " eighteen last night, I presumed you might be out of cash, and resolved to model my demand ac-" cordingly." I could not help admiring the cavalier behaviour of this spark, of whom I defired to know his reason for saying, I was bubbled.-He then gave me to understand, that before he came to my lodgings, he had beat up Tom Tofsle, who having been prefent, informed him of the particulars, rehearfed all the fine things I faid to Melinda, with which he proposed to entertain the town; and among other circumstances, assured him, my mistress cheated with fo little art, that no body but a meer novice could have been imposed upon. The The thoughts of becoming a subject of raillery for coxcombs, and losing my money to boot, stung me to the quick; but I made a virtue of my indignation, and swore that no man should, with impunity, either asperse the character of Melinda, or turn my behaviour into ridicule. He replied in a dry manner, that I would find it an Herculean task to chastise every body who should laugh at my expence; and as for the character of Melinda, he did not see how it could suffer by what was laid to her charge; for that cheating at cards, far from being reckoned a blemish among people of sashion, was looked upon as an honourable indication of superior genius and address.—
"But let us wave this subject, said he, and go to the coffee-house, in order to make a party for dinner."

THE TENEDED AND THE TENEDED AND THE TENEDED

CHAP. XLVIII.

We repair to the coffee-bouse, where we overhear a curious dispute between Wagtail and Medlar, which is referred to our decision—the dostor gives an account of his experiment—Medlar is roasted by Banter, at the ordinary—the old gentleman's advice to me.

BEING as willing to drop the theme, as he to propose it, I accompanied him thither, where we found Mr. Medlar and doctor Wagtail, disputing upon the word Custard, which the physician affirmed should be spelled with a G, because it was derived from the Latin verb gustare, "to taste." — But Medlar pleaded custom in behalf of C, observing, that by the doctor's rule, we ought to change pudding unto budding, because it is derived from the French word Boudin; and in that case why not retain the original

ed,

ginal orthography and pronunciation of all the foreign words we have adopted; by which means our language would become a diffonant jargon without standard or propriety. The controversy was referred to us; and Banter, notwithstanding his real opinion to the contrary, decided it in favour of Wagtail: Upon which the peevish annuitant arose, and uttering the monosyllable, pish! with great emphasis, removed to another table.

We then enquired of the doctor, what progress he had made in the experiment of distilling tinder-water; and he told us he had been at all the glass-houses about town, but could find no body who would undertake to blow a retort large enough to hold the third part of the quantity prescribed; but he intended to try the process on as much as would produce five drops, which would be fufficient to prove the specific, and then he would make it a parliamentary affair; that he had already purchased a considerable weight of rags, in reducing which to tinder, he had met with a misfortune, which had obliged him to change his lodgings: For he had gathered them in a heap on the floor, and fet fire to them with a candle, on the supposition that the boards would sustain no damage, because it is the nature of flame to ascend; but by some very extraordinary accident, the wood was invaded, and began to blaze with great violence, which difordered him fo much, that he had not presence of mind enough to call for affishance, and the whole house must have been consumed with him in the midst of it, had not the smoke that rolled out of the windows in clouds, alarmed the neighbourhood, and brought people to his succour. - That he had lost a pair of black velvet breeches, and a tye-wig in the hurry, befides the expence of the rags, which were rendered useless by the water used to quench the flame, and the damage of the floor, which he was compelled to repair.—That his landlord believing him distracted, had infifted on his quitting his apartment at a minute's warning, and he was put to incredible inconvenience; but now he was fettled in a very comfortable house, and had the use of a large paved yard for preparing his tinder: So that he hoped in a very short

time to reap the fruits of his labour.

After having congratulated the doctor on his profpect, and read the papers, we repaired to an auction of pictures, where we entertained ourselves an hour or two; from thence we adjourned to the Mall, and after two or three turns, went back to dinner, Banter affuring us, that he intended to roaft Medlar at the ordinary; and indeed, we were no fooner fet than this Cynic began to execute his purpose by telling the old gentleman, he looked extremely well, confidering the little fleep he had enjoyed last night. To this compliment Medlar made no reply, but by a stare accompanied with a fignificant grin; - and Banter went on thus: " I don't know whether most to ad-" mire, the charity of your mind, or the vigour of " your body.—Upon my foul, Mr. Medlar, you " do generous things with the best taste of any man I " know! You extend your compassion to real ob-" jects, and exact only fuch returns as they are ca-" pable of making.-You must know, gentlemen, " (faid he, turning to the company) I had been up " most part of the night with a friend who is ill of " a fever, and on my return home this morning chanced to pass by a gin-shop still open, whence if-" fued a confused sound of mirth and jollity: Upon "which, I popped in my head and perceived Mr. " Medlar dancing bare-headed in the midst of ten or "twenty ragged bunters, who rejoiced at his expence. "But indeed, Mr. Medlar, you ought not to facrifice " your constitution to your benevolence. - Consider e you grow old apace; and therefore have a ree verend care of your health, which must certainly es be very much impaired by these nocturnal expedi-66 tions,"

"tions."-The tefty fenior could no longer contain himself, but cried hastily, "Tis well known " that your tongue is no flander."-" I think (faid the other) you might spare that observation, as you es are very fenfible, that my tongue has done you fig-" nal fervice on many occasions. - You may re-" member, that when you made your addresses to the " fat widow, who kept a publick house at Islington, "there was a report spread very much to the preju-" dice of your manhood, which coming to the ears " of your mistress, you was discarded immediately; " and I brought matters to a reconciliation, by affur-" ing her you had three baftards at nurse in the " country: How you ruined your own affair after-" wards, it is neither my business nor inclination to " relate." - This anecdote, which had no other foundation than in Banter's own invention, afforded a good deal of mirth to every body present, and provoked Mr Medlar beyond all fufferance; fo that he started up in a mighty passion, and forgetting that his mouth was full, bespattered those who sat next to him, while he discharged his indignation in a volley of oaths, and called Banter infignificant puppy, impertinent jackanapes, and an hundred fuch appellations; telling the company, he had invented these false malicious aspersions, because he would not lend him money to fquander away upon rooks and whores -" A very likely flory (faid Banter) that I should at-" tempt to borrow money of a man who is obliged " to practife a thousand shifts to make his weekly " allowance hold out to Saturday's night. Sometimes " he fleeps four and twenty hours at a stretch, by " which means he faves three meals, besides coffee-" house expence.—Sometimes he is fain to put up " with bread and cheese and finall beer for dinner; " and fometimes he regales on two penny worth of " ox cheek in a cellar." You are a lying " miscreant, (cried Medlar, in an ecitacy of rage)

"I can always command money enough to pay your taylor's bill, which I am fure is no trifle: and I have a good mind to give you a convincing proof of my circumstances, by profecuting you for deframation, sirrah." By this time the violence of his wrath had deprived him of his appetite, and he fat filent, unable to swallow one mouthful, while his tormentor enjoyed his mortification, and encreased his chagrin, by advising him to lay in plentifully for

his next day's fast.

Dinner being ended, we came down stairs to the coffee-room, and Banter went away to keep an appointment, saying, he supposed he should see Wagtail and me in the evening at the Bedford coffee-house. -He was no fooner gone, than the old gentleman took me aside, and taid, he was forry to see me so intimate with that fellow, who was one of the most graceless rakes about town, and had already wasted a good estate and constitution upon harlots; that he had been the ruin of many a young man, by introducing them into debauched company, and fetting a lewd example of all manner of wickedness; and that unless I was on my guard, he would strip me in a short time, both of my money and reputation. I thanked him for his information, and promised to conduct myself accordingly, wishing however, his caution had been a few hours more early, by which means I might have faved five guineas. Notwithstanding this intelligence, I was inclinable to impute some part of the charge to Medlar's revenge for the liberties taken with him at dinner; and therefore, as foon as I could disengage myself, applied to Wagrail for his opinion of the character in question; resolved to compare their accounts, allowing for the prejudice of each, and to form my judgment upon both, without adhering strictly to either.—The doctor assured me that he was a very pretty gentleman of family and fortune; a scholar, a wit, a critick, and perfectly well acquainted with the town; that his honour and courage were unquestionable, though fome extravagances he had been guilty of, and his talent for satire, had procured him enemies, and made some people shy of his acquaintance.—From these different sketches, I concluded that Banter was a young sellow of some parts, who had spent his sortune, but retained his appetites, and sallen out with the world, because he could not enjoy it to his wish.

I went to the Bedford coffee-house in the evening, where I met my friends, from thence proceeded to the play, and afterwards carried them home to my lodgings, where we supped in great good-humour.

CHAP. XLIX.

I receive a challenge—the consequences of it—the quarrel being made up, am put in arrest, by the care and affection of Strap—but immediately released upon explaining my affair—the behaviour of Mr. Oregan and his two friends—I visit Melinda, whom I divert with an account of the duel—propose marriage—she refers the matter to her mother, of whom I make a solemn demand of her daughter—the old lady's behaviour—I am discarded, resent their disdain.

HEN I was ready to go abroad next day, Strap brought me a letter, To Mr. Random, Esq; Those — Which, upon opening, I found contained a challenge conceived in these very extraordinary terms:

"SIR,

"SIR,
"Whereas I am informed that you make love to Mifs Melinda Goofetrap, This is to let you know, that she is under promise of marriage to me; and that I am at this present waiting at the back of Mentague-house, with a pair of good pistols in my hand; and if you will keep your appointment, I will make your tongue confess (after the breath is out of your body) that you do not deserve her as well as

Rourk Oregan."

I gueffed from the stile and subscription of this billet, that my rival was a true Melefian, and was not a little uneasy at the contents, especially that part, in which he afferred his right to my mistress by promise, a circumstance I did not know how to reconcile to her good fense and penetration.—However, this was no time for me to decline the defiance, because the succefs of my addresses might in a great measure depend upon my behaviour in that affair. I therefore immediately loaded my piffols, and betook myfelf in a hackney-coach to the place appointed, where I found a tall raw-boned man, with a hard featured countenance, and black buffy beard, walking by himfelf, wrapped up in a shabby great coat, over which his own hair descended in a leathern queue from his head, that was covered with a greafy hat trimmed with a tarnished pointe d'espagne. He no sooner perceived me advancing, than he pulled a pittol from his bosom, and presenting at me, snapt it without the least preamble. Alarmed at this rude falutation, I made a stand. and before he could adjust his other piece, fired one of mine at him, without doing any damage. By this time he was ready with his fecond, that flashed in the pan without going off: Upon which he called, with a true a true Tipperary cadence, "Fire away, honey"and began to hammer his flint with great deliberation. But I was resolved to make use of the advantage Fortune had given me; and therefore stept up, without throwing away my fire, defiring him to ask his life, or prepare for another world; but this flout Hibernian refused to condescend, and complained bitterly of my having quitted my ground before he could return my shot; saying I ought to go back to my station, and let him have an equal chance with me.-I endeavoured to perfuade him that I had given him a double chance already; and it was my business to prevent him from enjoying a third; -- but now, fince I had an opportunity, I demanded a parley, and defired to know his condition, and reason for calling me to the field, who, to the best of my remembrance, far from having done him any injury, had never before feen him. He told me that he was a gentleman of fortune, who had spent all he had, and hearing that Melinda had got ten thousand pounds, he intended to make himself master of that fum by espousing her, and was determined, in an honourable way, to cut the throats of all those who stood between him and his hopes .- I then demanded to know the foundation of his hopes; and now that I had feen him, being more and more aftonished at the circumstance of the promife, defired that he would explain that mystery: - He gave me to understand, that he trusted entirely to his birth and personal merit; that he had frequently written to Melinda, fetting forth his claim and pretentions, but the was never kind enough to fend an answer, or even to admit him into her presence; and that the promise he mentioned in his letter, was made by his friend Mr. Gahagan, who affured him, that no woman could refift a man of his appearance. - I could not forbear laughing to excess, at the fimplicity of my rival, who did not feem to relish my mirth, but began to be very ferious: Upon which

which I endeavoured to appeale him, by giving him my word and honour, that far from prejudicing his addresses to the lady, I would represent him to her in the most favourable light I could choose with any regard to truth; but he must not be surprised if she should remain blind to his deferts, for nothing was more capricious than a woman's mind, and the affection of that fex was feldom purchased with virtue alone.—That my declaration might have the better effect, I took notice of his dishabille, and professing forrow at feeing a gentleman reduced, flipt two guineas into his hand, at fight of which he threw away his pittols, and hugging me in his arms, cried, "Arrah, by Jesus now, you are the best friend I "have met with these seven long years."-When I had suffered some minutes in his embrace, he quitted me, and picking up his rufty arms, wished the devil might burn him if ever he should give me any further trouble about womankind.

The quarrel being thus amicably composed, I begged leave to look at his pistols, which I found so crazy and so foul, that, I believe it was happy for him neither of them was discharged, for one of them would certainly have split in the going off, and he would, in all probability, have lost his hand in the explosion; but what gave me a lively idea of the man's character was, to find, upon examination, that one of them had been loaded without being primed, and the other

primed without a charge.

While we walked home together, I expressed a defire of knowing my new friend's history; and he informed me of his having served in the German army as a volunteer against the Turks; that for his behaviour at the siege of Belgrade, he had been honoured with an ensign's commission, and afterwards promoted to the rank of lieutenant, in which station, it was his missfortune to affront his captain, who challenged him to the field, and was killed in the duel, upon which which he was obliged to retreat; -that he bad been in England some years foliciting his friends for provision in the British army; but being hitherto unsuccessful, was defired by Mr. Gahagan to turn his thoughts to matrimony, and make his fortune by an advantageous match; in confequence of which advice, he had made up to Melinda, and having heard by means of an Irish footman in the family, that I was her chief favourite, had called me out in hopes of removing, by my death, the greatest obstruction to his defires; but now he was convinced of my honour and generofity, he swore by the bleffed virgin, he would think of her no more, if there was not another woman in the world. - As a farther proof of his veracity, which I did not at all doubt, he opened an old iron fuff-box, and pulled out his commission in the imperial army, and his captain's challenge, which he preserved as testimonials of his character .- I was so well convinced of this poor man's honesty and courage, that I determined to speak in his behalf, to some of my acquaintance, who might recommend his case to the confideration of those who could provide for him; and in the mean time to accommodate him with a few cloaths, by which his appearance would be much mended, and himself enabled to renew his solicitations in person.

As we walked along, conversing socially together, we were met by a file of musqueteers, and Strap at their head, who no sooner approached, than with a frantic look, he cried, "Seize them! —— in the "name of God! seize them."—We were accordingly surrounded, and I put in arrest by the corporal, who was commanding officer; but captain Oregan disengaged himself, and ran with such speed towards Tottenham court-road, that he was out of sight in a moment. When my arms were delivered up, and myself secured, Strap became a little more composed, and asked pardon for the liberty he had taken, which

he hoped I would excuse, as it proceeded from his affection: He then told me that, suspecting the letter (which by the bye was brought by the author himfelf) contained fomething extraordinary, he had peeped through the key-hole, and seen me load my pittols; upon which he ran down to Whitehall, and applied to the officer on guard, for a party to put me in arrest, but before he returned, I was gone in a coach; that he had enquired which way I went, and having heard, that duels were commonly fought at the back of Montague-house, he conducted the guard to this place, where he thanked God for having found me fafe and found. I gave him to understand that I forgave his officious concern for once, but cautioned him in pretty severe terms, for making me the subject of idle conversation for the future; then turning to the corporal, thanked him for his care, and gave him a crown to drink with his men, affuring him that the rencontre was over long before he came up, and every thing compromised, as he might have observed by our behaviour; as a farther proof of which, he would find upon examination, that one of my piftols had been discharged; - but this civil person, without giving himself or me any further trouble, received the bounty with a thousand bows and acknowledgments, and returning the pistols, released me immediately.

He was not gone a hundred yards, when my friend Oregan came up, in order to rescue me, with two tatterdemalions whom he had engaged for that purpose, about the purlieus of St. Giles: One of them was armed with a musket that wanted a lock, and another with a rusty broad sword; but their dress surpassed all description.—When he understood I was already free, he made apology for his abrupt departure, and introduced me to his two companions: First, to counsellor Fitz-clabber, who, he told me, was then employed in compiling a history of the kings of Munster, from Irish manuscripts; and then to his

friend

friend Mr. Gahagan, who was a profound philosopher and politician, and had projected many excellent schemes for the good of his country.--But it seems these literati had been very ill rewarded for their ingenious labours; for between them both, there was but one shirt and half a pair of breeches. I thanked them very kindly for their readiness to assist me, and having offered my service in my turn, bade them good morrow, desiring Oregan to accompany me to my lodgings, where he was sitted with decent clothes from my wardrobe, so much to his satisfaction, that he swore eternal gratitude and friendship to me, and, at my request, recounted all the adventures of his life.

In the afternoon I waited on Melinda, who received me with great kindness and familiarity, and laughed excessively at my adventure with the Irishman, to whose wishes she was no stranger, having more than a dozen letters in her possession, which he had wrote to her on the subject of love, and which, for my entertainment, the submitted to my perusal. -Having made ourselves merry at the expence of this poor admirer, I seized the opportunity of her mother's going but of the room, and introduced my own passion, which I recommended to her with all the ardour and eloquence I was master of. ____ I flattered. fighed, swore, entreated, and acted a thousand extravagancies, in hopes of making fome impression on her heart; but she heard every thing I said without discovering the least emotion; and other company came in, before the would vouchsafe one serious reply.—After tea, the cards were brought in according to custom, and it was my good fortune to have Melinda for my partner; by which means, instead of lofing, I came off with five guineas clear gain.

I foon became acquainted with a good many people of fashion, and spent my time in the modish diversions of the town, such as plays, operas, masquerades, drums, assemblies, and puppet-shows; chiefly in com-

Vol. II. G pany

pany with Melinda, whom I cultivated with all the eagerness and address that my prospect could inspire, and my education afford: I spared neither my person nor my purle, to gratify her vanity and pride; my rivals were intimidated, and indeed outshone; and after all, I began to fear that the dear creature had not a heart to lofe. - At last, finding myself unable to support the expence of this amour much longer, I was determined to bring the matter to a crisis; and one evening, while we were together by ourselves, complained of her indifference, described the tortures of suspence to a love-fick mind, and pressed her to disclose her fentiments of matrimony and me, with fuch earnestness, that she could not, with all her art, shift the subject, but was obliged to come to an eclaircissement. She told me with a careless air, that she had no objection to my person, and if I could satisfy her mother in other particulars, I should not find her averse to the march; but she was resolved to do nothing in fuch a momentous concern without the advice and consent of her parent. This was no very agreeable declaration to me, whose aim had been to win her inclination first, and then secure my conquest by a private marriage, to which I flattered myself she would express no reluctance. --That I might not, however, desert my cause before it was desperate, I waited on her mother, and with great formality demanded the daughter in marriage. The good lady, who was a very notable woman, behaved with great state and civility; thanked me for the honour I intended her family; and faid, the did not doubt that I was in all respects qualified to make a woman happy; but it concerned her, as a parent anxious about the welfare of her child, to inquire into the particulars of my fortune, and know what fettlement I proposed to make. To this intimation, which would have utterly disconcerted me, if I had not expected it, I replied without hesitation, that though

though my fortune was very small, I was a gentleman by birth and education, would maintain her daughter in the sphere of a gentlewoman, and settle her own dowry on her and her heirs for ever. This careful matron did not feem to relish my propofal, but observed with a demure countenance, that there was no necessity for settling that upon her child which was her own already: However, if I pleased, her lawyer should confer with mine upon the matter : and in the mean time, she defired I would favour her with the perusal of my rent-roll.-Notwithstanding the vexation I was under, I could fcarce forbear laughing in her face, at the mention of my rent-roll. which was, indeed, a fevere piece of fatire upon my pretensions. I frankly owned I had no landed estate: And told her, that I could not exactly specify the sum I was mafter of, until I had regulated my affairs, which were at present in some disorder; but that I would take an opportunity of fatisfying her on that head very foon.

It was not long before I took my leave, and returned to my lodgings in a very melancholy mood, perfuaded that I had nothing more to expect from that quarter. I was confirmed in this opinion next day, when I went back with a view of explaining myself more fully to the old gentlewoman; and was told by the footman, that his ladies were not at home, although I had seen Melinda through the blinds at a parlour window, as I went up to the door. Incensed at this affront, I quitted the door, without saying one word, and as I repassed the parlour, bowed to Miss, who still remained in the same situation, securely

fcreened, as the thought, from my view.

This disappointment gave me more uneafiness on Strap's account, than my own; for I was in no danger of dying for love of Melinda; on the contrary, the remembrance of my charming Narcissa, was a continual check upon my conscience, during the G 2 whole

whole course of my addresses; and perhaps contributed to the bad success of my scheme, by controul-

ing my raptures and condemning my defign.

There was a necessity for informing my companion of every thing that happened to me, and I performed this piece of duty in an affected passion, swearing I would be his pack-horse no longer, and defiring him to take the management of his affairs into his own hands. This finesse had the defired effect, for instead of grumbling over my miscarriage, Strap was frightened at the passion I seigned, and begged me for the love of God to be appealed; observing, that although we had suffered a great loss, it was not irreparable; and if fortune frowned to-day, the might perhaps smile to-morrow.- I pretended to acquiesce in his remarks, praise his equanimity, and promise to improve by misfortune.—He, on the other hand, pretended to be perfectly well fatisfied with my conduct, and conjured me to follow the dictates of my own reflection; but in spite of all his affectation. I could perceive his inward affliction, and his vifage fenfibly increased in longitude from that day.

CHAP. L.

I long to be revenged on Melinda—apply to Banter for his assistance—he contrives a scheme for that purpose, which is put in execution with great success—I make an attempt on the heart of Miss Gripewell, but am disappointed—grow melancholy at my disappointment, and have recourse to the bottle—receive a lillet-deux—am ravisked with the contents—find myself involved in an intrigue, which I imagined would make my fortune—am confounded at my mistake, which b nishes all thoughts of matrimony.

IN the mean time, my attention was wholly engroffed in fearch of another mistress, and the defire of being revenged on Melinda, in both which schemes I was very much affisted by Billy Chatter, who was such a necessary creature among the ladies, that in all private dances he engaged the men.---To him therefore I applied, defiring he would introduce me to a partner of fome figure, at the next private affembly, for the fake of a frolick, the intention of which I would afterwards communicate. Billy, who had heard fomething of a difference between Melinda and me, immediately smoked part of my design, and thinking I only wanted to alarm her jealoufy a little, promifed to gratify my defire, by matching me with a partner worth thirty thousand pounds, whom the ladies of this end of the town had lately taken into their management and protection.-Upon further inquiry, I found this person's name was Miss Biddy Gripewell; that her father, who had been G 3 a pawn-

a pawn-broker, died intestate, by which means all his substance descended to his daughter, who was so little a favourite, that could the old man have prevailed with his own rapacious disposition, to part with as much money as would have paid the expence of a will, she would not have inherited a fixth part of his fortune;—that during his life, far from being educated in a way fuitable to fuch great expectations. fhe was obliged to live like a fervant wench, and do the most menial offices in the family.—But his funeral was no fooner performed, than the affumed the fine lady, and found fo many people of both fexes, to flatter, carefs, and instruct her, that, for want of difcretion and experience, she was grown infusferably vain and arrogant, and pretended to no less than a duke or earl at least, for her husband; -that she had the misfortune to be neglected by the English quality, but a certain poor Scottish lord was then making interest to be introduced to her acquaintance. In the mean time, she was fallen into the hands of a notable lady, who had already disposed of her to a lieutenant of foot, a distant relation of her ladyship's, though Miss, as yet, knew nothing of the affair; and laftly, that if I proposed to dance with her, I must give him leave to reprefent me as a knight or foreign count at least. - I was ravished at this piece of information, and confented, for one night, to personate a French marquis, that I might the easier fulfil my revenge.

Having made the appointment with Chatter, I went to Banter's lodgings, as I had by this time conceived a great opinion of his penetration and knowledge; and after I had enjoined fecreey, told him every circumstance of my difgrace with Melinda, and imparted the plan I had projected to mortify that proud coquette, defiring his advice in improving, and affistance in executing the scheme.—Nothing could be more agreeable to his misanthropical temper, than an account of her behaviour and my resentment: He applauded

pleated

my resolution, and proposed that I should not only provide myself with a proper partner, but also procure fuch an one for Miss Goosetrap, as should infallibly entail upon her the ridicule of all her acquaintance: For this purpose he mentioned his barber, who, he faid, was an exceeding coxcomb lately come from Paris, whose absurd affectation and grimace would eafily pass upon her, for the forightly politesse of a gentleman improved by travel .- I hugged him for this hint; and he affured me, it would be no difficult matter to make him believe, that Melinda having feen him by accident, was captivated by his appearance, and longed for his acquaintance. - He actually engaged him on this pretence, and painted his good fortune in fuch colours, that the poor shaver was quite befide himself with joy.—He was immediately fitted with a tawdry fuit of cloaths belonging to Banter, and by him recommended to Chatter, as a very pretty fellow just returned from his travels .- Master Billy, who acted as gentleman usher to a great many of the fair fex in and about town, undertook, at once, to bespeak Melinda in his behalf; and every thing happened according to my wish.

At the time appointed, I appeared dressed to the best advantage; and in the character of Marquis, had the honour of opening the ball with the rich heiress, who attracted the eyes of the whole company, by the prodigious number of jewels with which she was adorned.—Among others I perceived Melinda, who could no more conceal her envy than assonishment at my success: Her curiosity was still more slagrant and tormenting, for she had never seen Miss Gripewell before; and Chatter who alone could give her any satisfaction on that head, was engaged in conversation at the other end of the room.——I observed her impatience, and exulted in her chagrin; and after my partner was set, took the opportunity of passing by her to make a slight bow without stopping; which com-

G 4

pleated my triumph and her indignation. She changed colour, bridled up, affumed an air of disdain, and flirted her fan with such a sury, that it went to pieces in a moment, to the no small entertainment of those who sat near and observed her.

At length the metamorphofed barber took her out. and acted his part with fuch ridiculous extravagance. that the mirth of the whole company was excited at his expence, and his partner fo much ashamed, that before the country dances began the retired in great confusion, under pretence of being taken suddenly ill, and was followed by her gallant, who, no doubt, imagined her indisposition was nothing but love; and laid hold of the occasion of conducting her home, to comfort her, with an affurance of his entertaining a reciprocal passion .- They were no sooner gone, than an inquifitive whisper of "Who is he?" ran round the room; and Chatter could give them no other intelligence about him, than that he was a man of fortune, just returned from his travels: I, who alone was acquainted with his real quality, affected ignorance, well knowing that female curiofity would not rest satisfied with such a general account, and that the discovery would proceed with a better grace from any body than me.

Mean while, I was tempted by the richness of the prize, to practise upon Miss Gripewell's heart, but soon found it too well fortified with pride and indifference to yield to any efforts in my own character, and I neither would nor could preserve the title I had

borrowed longer than that night.

As I expected, every thing came to light next day: The barber, in pure simplicity of heart, detected himfelf to Melinda, and discovered the soundation of his hopes; she sickened at the affront, and was ashamed to shew her face in publick for many weeks after this accident. Poor Chatter sound it impossible to justify himself to her satisfaction; was in utter disgrace with

Miss

Miss Gripewell, for having imposed me upon her as a nobleman; and suffered very much in his character

and influence among the ladies in general.

Finding my finances diminished more than one half, and my project as little advanced as on the first day of my arrival in town, I began to despair of my succefs, and grew melancholy at the prospect of approaching want .- To dispel the horrors of this fiend, I had recourse to the bottle, and kept more company than ever .--- I became particularly attached to the play-house, conversed with the actors behind the scenes, grew acquainted with a body of templars, and in a short time commenced a professed wit and critic. Indeed I may fay, without vanity, that I was much better qualified than any one of my companions, who were, generally speaking, of all the creatures I ever converfed with, the most ignorant and affuming.—By means of these avocations I got the better of care, and learned to separate my ideas in such a manner, that whenever I was attacked by a gloomy reflection, I could shove it aside, and call in some agreeable reverie to my affistance. This was not the case with Strap, who practised a thousand shifts to conceal the forrow that preyed upon his carcass, and reduced him to the resemblance of a mere skeleton.

While I thus posted, in a thoughtless manner, to-wards poverty, I one day received, by the penny-post, a letter written in a woman's hand, containing a great many high-slown compliments, warm protestations of love, couched in a very poetical stile, an earnest defire of knowing whether or not my heart was engaged, by leaving an answer at a certain place directed to R. B. and the whole subscribed, "Your incompliments of this billet-doux, which I admired as a master-piece of tenderness and elegance, and was already up to the ears in love with the author, whom

my imagination represented as a lady of fortune, in the bloom of youth and beauty.- Elevated with this conjecture, I went to work and exhausted my invention in composing an answer suitable to the sublimity of her flyle, and the ardour of her fentiments. - I expressed my admiration of her wit, in terms the most hyperbolical, and while I acknowledged myself unworthy of her regard, declared myfelf enamoured of her understanding; and in the most pathetic manner, implored the honour of an interview.—Having finished this performance, and communicated it to Strap, who skipped about for joy, I dispatched him with it to the place appointed, which was the house of a milliner not far from Bond-street, and defired him to keep watch near the door for some time, that he might discover the person who should call for it. -In less than an hour he returned with a joyful countenance, and told me that foon after he had delivered the letter a chairman was called, to whom it was given, with directions to carry it to the house of a rich gentleman in the neighbourhood, whether he (Strap) followed him, and faw it put into the hands of a waiting-woman, who paid the meffenger, and thut the door.-That upon inquiry at an ale-house hard by, where he called for a pint of beer, he underflood, the gentleman to whom the house belonged had an only daughter, very handsome, who would inherit his whole effate; and who certainly was the author of the billet I had received .- I was of the fame opinion, and hugging myself in the happy profrest, dreffed immediately, and paffed in great state by the Loufe that contained my unknown admirer. Nor was my vanity disappointed; for I perceived a beautiful young creature standing at one of the windows of the dining-room, who, I imagined, observed me wi h more than common curiofity. That I might indulge her view, and at the same time feast my own, I affected to stop, and gave orders to Strap, in the

street, just opposite to her station, by which means I had an opportunity of seeing her more distinctly, and of congratulating myself on having made a conquest of so much perfection.—In a sew minutes she retired, and I betook myself to the ordinary, in a rapture of hope, which deprived me of my appetite for that meal, and sent me home in the evening to indulge

my contemplation.

Early next day, I was favoured with another epiftle from my unknown charmer, fignifying her unutterable joy at the receipt of mine, which, while it made a tender of my heart, convinced her of the value of Above all things, the professed extreme pleasure in finding me fo much attached to her understanding, a circumstance that not only flattered her in the most fensible part, but at the same time argued my own fagacity.-As for the interview I defired, the affured me, that I could not be more eager for fuch an occafion than she; but she must not only facrifice a little more to decorum, but be fatisfied of my honourable intentions, before she would grant that request: Mean while, she gave me to understand, that although she might owe some deference to the opinion of certain persons, she was resolved, in an affair that so nearly concerned her happiness, to consult her own inclination, preferable to the advice of the whole world; especially as she was urged to such condescension by no confideration of fortune, what she depended upon being her own without restriction or controul .-Struck with admiration at the philosophy and felf-denial of my miftress, who seemed intensible of the beauty she possessed; and in particular, ravished with that piece of intelligence, by which I learned her fortune was independent, I refumed the pen, launched out into encomiums on the dignity of her fentiments, affected to undervalue the charms of external beauty, pretended to ground my passion on the qualities of her mind; complained of her rigour in facrificing G 6 my

my repose to an over-scrupulous regard to decorum, and declared the purity of my designs in the
most solemn and pathetic vows.—This performance being sealed and directed, was sent to the place
appointed, by Strap, who, that we might be still the
more confirmed in our belief, renewed his watch,
and in a little time brought back the same informamation as before, with this addition, that Miss Sparkle,
(the name of my correspondent) looking out at the
window, no sooner saw the messenger arrive, than she
shut the casement in a fort of beautiful confusion, and
disappeared; eager, no doubt, to hear from the dear

object of her love.

My doubts now vanished, the long expected port appeared, and I looked upon myfelf as perfectly fecure of that happiness I had been in quest of so long. -After dinner, I fauntered in company with doctor Wagtail, to that part of the town in which my enamorata lived; and as he was a mere register, inquired of him into the name, character and fortune of every body who possessed a good house in the streets through which we passed; when it came to his turn, to mention Sir John Sparkle, he represented him as a man of an immense estate and narrow disposition, who mewed up his only child, a fine young lady, from the conversation of mankind, under the strict watch and inspection of an old governante, who was either so honest, envious, or insatiable, that no body had been, as yet, able to make her a friend, or get access to her charge, though numbers attempted it every day; not so much on account of her expectations from her father, who being a widower, might marry again, and have fons, as for a fortune of twelve thousand pounds lest her by an uncle, of which she could not be deprived.—This piece of news exactly tallying with the last part of the letter I had been honoured with in the morning, had fuch an effect on me, that any man, except Wagtail, might have obferved ferved my emotion; but his attention was too much engroffed by the contemplation of his own importance, to suffer him to be affected with the deportment of any other body, unless it happened to be so particular, that he could not help taking notice of it.

When I had difengaged myfelf from him, whose conversation grew insipid to me, I went home, and made Strap acquainted with the fruit of my refearches. -This faithful 'squire was almost choaked with transports, and even wept with joy; but whether on account of himself or me, I shall not pretend to determine. -- Next day a third billet-doux was brought to me, containing many expressions of tenderness, mingled with some affecting doubts about the artifice of man, the inconstancy of youth, and the jealoufy often attending the most fincere passion; withal defiring I would excuse her, if she should try me a little longer, before she declared herself beyond the power of retracting. - These interesting scruples added fuel to my flame, and impatience to my hope; I redoubled my complaints of her indifference, and pressed her to an affignation with such fervid entreaties, that in a few days, the confented to meet me at the house of that milliner who had forwarded all my letters. - During the interval between the date of her promise, and the hour of appointment, my pride foared beyond all reason and description; I lost all remembrance of the gentle Narcissa, and my thoughts were wholly employed in planning triumphs over the malice and contempt of the world.

At length the happy hour arrived, I flew to the place of rendezvous, and was conducted into an apartment, where I had not waited ten minutes, when I heard the rustling of filk and the found of feet ascending the stairs: My heart took the alarm, and beat quick, my cheeks glowed, my nerves thrilled, and my knees shook with extasy! I perceived the door opening, saw a gold brocade petticoat advance, and

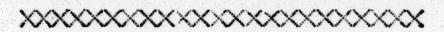
forung forward to embrace my charmer .- Heaven and earth! how shall I paint my situation, when I found Miss Sparkle converted into a wrinkled hag turned of seventy! I was struck dumb with amazement, and petrified with horror! This ancient urganda perceived my diforder, and approaching with a languishing air, seized my hand, asking in a squeaking tone, if I was indisposed .- Her monstrous affectation completed the difgust I had conceived for her at first appearance; and it was a long time before I could command myself so much, as to behave with common civility: At length, however, I recollected myfelf, and pronounced an apology for my behaviour, which, I said, proceeded from a dizziness that seized me all of a fudden. My hoary Dulcinea, who, no doubt, had been alarmed at my confusion, no sooner learned the cause to which I now ascribed it, than she discovered her joy in a thousand amorous coquetries, and affumed the sprightly airs of a girl of sixteen. One while, she ogled me with her dim eyes, quenched in rheum; then, as if the was ashamed of that freedom, she affected to look down, blush, and play with her fan, then tofs her head that I might not perceive a palfy that shook it, ask some childish questions with a lifping accent, giggle and grin with her mouth thut, to conceal the ravages of time upon her teeth, leer upon me again, figh piteously, fling herfelf about in her chair to shew her agility, and act a great many more abfurdities that youth and beauty can alone excuse. Shocked as I was at my disappointment, my disposition was incapable of affronting any person who loved me; I therefore endeavoured to put a good face on the matter for the prefent, refolved to drop the whole affair as foon as I should get clear of her company; with this view I uttered fome civil things, and in particular defired to know the name and condition of the lady who had honoured me fo much. She told me her name was Withers,

thers, that the lived with Sir John Sparkle in quality of governess to his only daughter, in which fituation the had picked up a comfortable fufficiency to make her easy for life; that she had the pleasure of seeing me at church, where my appearance and deportment made fuch an impression upon her heart, that she could enjoy no eafe until she had inquired into my character, which she found so amiable in all respects, that she yielded to the violence of her inclination, and ventured to declare her passion, with too little regard perhaps to the decorum of her fex; but she hoped I would forgive a trespass of which I myself was, in some measure, the cause, and impute her intrusion to the irresistible dictates of love. -- No decayed rake ever fwallowed a bolus with more reluctance than I felt in making a reply fuitable to this compliment, when, instead of the jewel, I found the crazy casket only in my power; and yet my hopes began to revive a little, when I considered, that by carrying on the appearance of an intrigue with the duenna, I might possibly obtain access to her charge. Encouraged by this fuggestion, my temper grew more serene, my reserve wore off, I talked en cavalier, and even made love to this antiquated coquette, who feemed extremely happy in her adorer, and spread all her allurements to make her imagined conquest more fecure. - The good woman of the house treated us with tea and fweet-meats, and afterwards withdrew like a civil experienced matron as the was. Left thus to our mutual endearments, Miss Withers. (for the was still a maiden) began to talk of matrimony, and expressed so much impatience in all her behaviour, that had she been fifty years younger, I might possibly have gratified her longing without having recourse to the church; but this step my virtue as well as interest forbad. When the inclinations of an old maid settle upon a young fellow, he is perfecuted with her addresses; but should he once grant her

the favour, he will never be able to disentangle himfelf from her importunities and reproaches. It was my bufiness to defer the ceremony as long as possible. under the most specious pretences, with a view of becoming acquainted with Miss Sparkle, in the mean time; and I did not despair of success, when I confidered, that in the course of our correspondence I should, in all probability, be invited to vifit my miftress in her own apartment, and by these means have an opportunity of conversing with her charming ward. Pleased with this prospect, my heart dilated with joy, I talked in raptures to the stale governante. and kiffed her shrivelled hand with great devotion: She was fo much transported with her good fortune, that the could not contain her extafy, but flew upon me like a tygress, and pressed her skinny lips to mine; when (as it was no doubt concerted by her evil genius) a dose of garlick she had swallowed that morning. to dispel wind I suppose, began to operate with such a fudden explosion, that human nature, circumstanced as I was, could not endure the shock with any degree of temper .- I loft all patience and reflection, flung away from her in an instant, snatched my hat and cane, and ran down stairs as if the devil had me in pursuit, and could scarce restrain the convulfion of my bowels, which were grievously offended by the perfume that affaulted me. Strap, who waited my return with impatience, feeing me arrive in the utmost disorder, stood motionless with apprehension, and durst not inquire into the cause.

After I had washed my mouth more than once, and recruited my spirits with a glass of wine, I recounted to him every particular of what had happened; to which he made no other reply for some time, than lifting up his eyes, clasping his hands, and uttering a hollow groan.—At length he observed, in a melancholy tone, that it was a thousand pities my organs were so delicate as to be offended with the smell of garlick:

garlick: "Ah! God help us, faid he, 'tis not the "fleams of garlick, no, nor of fomething elfe, that "would give me the least uneafiness—see what it is to be a cobler's fon."—I replied hastily, "I wish then, you would go and retrieve my miscarriage."—At this suggestion he started, forced a smile, and less the room, shaking his head. Whether the old gentlewoman resented my abrupt departure so much, that her love changed into disdain, or was ashamed to see me on account of her infirmity, I know not; but I was never troubled again with her passion.



CHAP. LI.

I cultivate an acquaintance with two noblemen—am introduced to Earl Strutwell—bis kind promise and invitation—the behaviour of his porter and lacquey—be receives me with an appearance of uncommon affection—undertakes to speak in my behalf to the minister—informs me of his success, and wishes me joy—introduces a conversation about Petronius Arbiter—falls in love with my watch, which I press upon him—I make a present of a diamond ring to Lord Straddle—impart my good fortune to Strap and Banter, who disabuses me, to my utter mortification.

BAFFLED hitherto in my matrimonial schemes, I began to question my talents for the science of fortune-hunting, and to bend my thoughts towards some employment under the government. With the view of procuring which, I cultivated the acquaintance of Lord Straddle and Swillpot, whose fathers were men of interest at court.—I found these young noblemen as open to my advances as I could desire: I accompanied them in their midnight rambles, and often dined with them at taverns, where I had

the honour of paying the reckoning.

I one day took the opportunity, while I was loaded with protestations of friendship, to disclose my defire of being fettled in some finecure; and to solicit their influence in my behalf. - Swillpot fqueezing my hand, faid I might depend opon his fervice, by God. The other fwore that no man would be more proud than he to run my errands. Encouraged by these declarations I ventured to express an inclination to be introduced to their fathers, who were able to do my business at once. Swillpot frankly owned he had not spoke to his father these three years; and Straddle affured me his father having lately disobliged the minister, by subscribing his name to a protest in the house of peers, was thereby rendered incapable of ferving his friends at present; but he undertook to make me acquainted with Earl Strutwell, who was hand and glove with a certain person who ruled the roast. This offer I embraced with many acknowledgments, and plied him so closely, in spite of a thousand evations, that he found himself under a neceffity of keeping his word, and actually carried me to the levee of this great man, where he left me in a crowd of fellow-dependents, and was ushered to a particular closet audience; from whence, in a few minutes, he returned with his lordship, who took me by the hand, affured me he would do me all the fervice he could, and defired to see me often .--- I was charmed with my reception, and although I had heard that a courtier's promise is not to be depended upon, I thought I discovered so much sweetness of temper and candour in this Earl's countenance, that I did not doubt of finding my account in his protection.

-I resolved therefore, to profit by this permission, and waited on him next audience day, when I was favoured with a particular smile, squeeze of the hand, and a whisper, fignifying that he wanted half an hour's conversation with me in private, when he should be difengaged, and for that purpose defired me to come and drink a dish of chocolate with him to-morrow morning. - This invitation, which did not a little flatter my vanity and expectation, I took care to observe, and went to his lordship's house at the time appointed. Having rapped at the gate, the porter unbolted and kept it half open, placing himfelf in the gap, like foldiers in a breach, to dispute my paffage. - i asked if his lord was stirring? - He answered with a furly aspect, " No." -- " At what hour " does he commonly rife?" faid I: " Sometimes " fooner, fometimes later," (faid he) closing the door upon me by degrees.) -1 then told him, I was come by his lordship's own appointment; to which intimation this Cerberus replied, "I have received " no orders about the matter;" and was upon the point of shutting me out, when I recollected myself all of a fudden, and flipping a crown into his hand, begged as a favour that he would inquire, and let me know whether or not the Earl was up. The grim janitor relented at the touch of my money, which he took with all the indifference of a tax-gatherer, and shewed me into a parlour, where, he said, I might amuse myself till such time as his lord should be awake. -I had not fat ten minutes in this place, when a footman entered, and without speaking, stared at me; I interpreted this piece of his behaviour into "Pray, "Sir, what is your business?" and asked the same question I had put to the porter, when I accosted him first. The lacquey made the same reply, and disappeared before I could get any further intelligence.-In a little time he returned, on pretence of poking the fire, and looked at me again with great earnestness; upon

upon which I began to perceive his meaning, and tipping him with half a crown, defired he would be. fo good as to fall upon some method of letting the Earl know that I was in the house.———He made a low bow, faid, "Yes, Sir" and vanished. -- This bounty was not thrown away, for in an inflant he came back, and conducted me to a chamber, where I was received with great kindness and samiliarity by his lordship, whom I found just risen, in his morning gown and flippers .- After breakfast, he entered into a particular conversation with me about my travels, the remarks I had made abroad, and examined me to the full extent of my understanding. - My anfwers feemed to please him very much, he frequently fqueezed my hand, and looking at me with a fingular complacency in his countenince, bade me depend upon his good offices with the ministry in my behalf. "Young men of your qualifications, faid 66 he, ought to be cherished by every administra-" tion .-- For my own part, I fee so little merit in the world, that I have laid it down as a maxim, to encourage the least appearance of genius and er virtue to the utmost of my power-you have a ee great deal of both; and will not fail of making a " figure one day, if I am not mistaken; but you ee must lay your account with mounting by gradual " fteps to the summit of your fortune. - Rome was not built in a day .- As you understand the languages per-66 feelly well, how would you like to cross the sea as " fecretary to an embaffy?"—I affured his lordship, with great eagerness, that nothing could be more agreeable to my inclination: Upon which he bade me make myfelf eafy, my bufiness was done, for he had a place of that kind in his view .- This piece of generofity affected me so much, that I was unable for some time to express my gratitude, which at length broke out in acknowledgments of my own unworthiness, and encomiums on his benevolence.—I could not even help

help shedding tears, at the goodness of this noble lord, who no sooner perceived them than he caught me in his arms, and hugged and kissed me with a teemingly paternal affection.—Consounded at this uncommon instance of sondness for a stranger, I remained a few moments silent and ashamed, then rose and took my leave, after he had assured me that he would speak to the minister in my savour, that very day; and desired that I would not for the suture give myself the trouble of attending at his levee, but come at the same hour every day when he should be at leisure, that is, three times a week.

Though my hopes were now very fanguine, I determined to conceal my prospect from every body, even from Strap, until I should be more certain of success; and in the mean time, give my patron no respite from my folicitations. - When I renewed my vifit, I found the street-door opened to me as if by enchantment; but in my passage towards the presence-room, I was met by the valet de chambre, who cast some furious looks at me, the meaning of which I could not comprehend. The Earl faluted me at entrance with a tender embrace, and wished me joy of his success with the Premier, who, he faid, had preferred his recommendation to that of two other noblemen very urgent in behalf of their respective friends, and abfolutely promised that I should go to a certain foreign court in quality of fecretary to an ambaffador and plenipotentiary, who was to let out in a few weeks, on an affair of vast importance to the nation. I was thunder-Aruck with my good fortune, and could make no other reply, than kneel and attempt to kiss my benefactor's hand, which submission he would not permit, but raising me up, pressed me to his breast with furprifing emotion, and told me he had now taken upon himself the care of making my fortune. - What inhanced the value of the benefit still the more, was his making light of the favour, and shifting the converfation

fation to another subject: Among other topicks of discourse, that of the Belles Lettres was introduced. upon which his lordship held forth with great taste and erudition, and discovered an intimate knowledge of the authors of antiquity. - "Here's a book, (faid he, taking one from his bosom) written with great e elegance and spirit, and though the subject may es give offence to some narrow-minded people, the author will always be held in efteem by every perfon of wit and learning." So faying, he put into my hand Petronius Arbiter, and asked my opinion of his wit and manner.—I told him, that in my opinion, he wrote with great ease and vivacity, but was withal fo lewd and indecent, that he ought to find no quarter or protection among people of morals and tafte. - " I own, (replied the Earl) that his tafte in love is generally decried, and indeed condemned by our laws; but perhaps that may be more owing to prejudice and misapprehension, than to true " reason and deliberation.—The best man among the ancients is faid to have entertained that paffion; one of the wifest of their legislators has permitted "the indulgence of it in his commonwealth; the " most celebrated poets have not scrupled to avow it: at this day it prevails not only over all the east, but in most parts of Europe; in our own country " it gains ground apace, and in all probability will become in a short time a more fashionable vice than " simple fornication.—Indeed there is something to be faid in vindication of it, for notwithstanding the se severity of the law against offenders in this way, it must be confessed that the practice of this passion is unattended with that curse and burthen upon 66 fociety, which proceeds from a race of miferable and deferted bastards, who are either murdered by 66 their parents, deserted to the utmost want and wretchedness, or bred up to prey upon the commonwealth: And it likewise prevents the debauchery of many a young maiden, and the profitution of honest men's wives; not to mention the consideration of health, which is much less liable to be impaired in the gratification of this appetite, than in the exercise of common venery, which by ruining the constitutions of our young men, has produced a puny progeny that degenerates from generation to generation: Nay, I have been told, that there is another motive perhaps more powerful than all these, that induces people to cultivate this inclination; namely, the exquisite pleasure attending its success."

From this discourse, I began to be apprehensive that his lordship finding I had travelled, was asraid I might have been insected with this spurious and sordid desire abroad, and took this method of sounding my sentiments on the subject.—Fired at this supposed suspicion, I argued against it with great warmth, as an appetite unnatural, absurd, and of pernicious consequence; and declared my utter detestation and abhorrence of it in these lines of the satirist.

" Eternal infamy the wretch confound

"Who planted first that vice on British
"ground!

"A vice! that 'spite of sense and nature reigns,

" And poisons genial love, and manhood stains."

The Earl smiled at my indignation, told me he was glad to find my opinion of the matter so conformable to his own, and that what he had advanced was only to provoke me to an answer, with which he professed himself perfectly well pleased.

After I had enjoyed a long audience, I happened to look at my watch in order to regulate my motions by it; and his lordship observing the chased case, desired

to see the device, and examine the execution, which he approved with fome expressions of admiration. Confidering the obligations I lay under to his lordship, I thought there could not be a fitter opportunity than the prefent, to manifest, in some shape, my gratitude; I therefore begged he would do me the honour to accept of the watch, as a small testimony of the fense I had of his lordship's generosity; but he resused it in a peremptory manner, and faid he was forry I should entertain such a mercenary opinion of him; observing at the same time, that it was the most beautiful piece of workmanship he had ever seen; and defiring to know where he could have fuch another. I begged a thousand pardons for the freedom I had taken, which I hoped he would impute to nothing else than the highest veneration for his person-told him that, as it came to my hand by accident in France, I could give him no information about the maker, for there was no name on the infide; and once more humbly entreated that he would indulge me fo far as to use it for my sake.—He was still positive in refusing it; but was pleased to thank me for my generous offer, faying, it was a present that no nobleman need be ashamed of receiving; though he was resolved to shew his disinterestedness with regard to me, for whom he had conceived a particular friendship; and infifted (if I was willing to part with the watch) upon knowing what it had coft, that he might at least indemnify me, by refunding the money. On the other hand, I affured his lordship, that I should look upon it as an uncommon mark of distinction, if he would take it without further question; and rather than disoblige me, he was at last persuaded to put it in his pocket, to my no small satisfaction, who took my leave immediately, after having received a kind squeeze, and an injunction to depend upon his promife.

Buoyed up with this reception, my heart opened, I gave away a guinea among the lacqueys, who efcorted me to the door, flew to the lodgings of Lord Straddle, upon whom I forced my diamond ring, as an acknowledgment for the great fervice he had done me, and from thence hied me home, with an intent of sharing my happiness with honest Strap. -I determined, however, to heighten his pleasute, by depressing his spirits at first, and then bringing in the good news with double relish.—For this purpose I affected the appearance of disappointment and chagrin, and told him in an abrupt manner, that I had loft the watch and diamond. Poor Hugh, who had been already haraffed into a confumption by intelligence of this fort, no fooner heard these words, than, unable to contain himself, he cried with distraction in his looks, "God in heaven forbid!"—I could carry on the farce no longer, but laughing in his face, told him every thing that had passed, as above His features were immediately unbended, recited. and the transition so affecting, that he wept with joy, calling my Lord Strutwell by the appellations of Jewel, Phoenix, Rara avis; and praising God, that there was still some virtue lest among our nobility. -Our mutual congratulations being over, we gave way to our imagination, and anticipated our happiness by profecuting our success through the different steps of promotion, till I arrived at the rank of a prime minister, and he to that of my first secretary.

d

n

d

e

-

13

to

1-

1e

ht

n(

ld

if

2-

to

ho

a

nis

ved

Intoxicated with these ideas I went to the ordinary, where, meeting with Banter, I communicated the whole affair in confidence to him, concluding with an affurance that I would do him all the service in my power.—He heard me to an end with great patience, then regarding me a good while with a lock of disdain, pronounced, "So, your business is done, of you think?"——"As good as done, I believe," (said I.)——"Till tell you (replied he) what

Vol. II. H " wiil

will do it fill more effectually --- A halter-"Sdeath! if I had been fuch a gull to two fuch 66 fcoundrels as Strutwell and Straddle, I would " without any more ado tuck myfelf up." Shocked at this exclamation, I defired him with fome confusion to explain himself: Upon which he gave me to understand, that Straddle was a poer contemptible wretch, who lived by borrowing and pimping for his fellow peers; that in consequence of this last capacity, he had doubtless introduced me to Strutwell. who was fo notorious for a passion for his own fex, that he was amazed his character had never reached my ears; and that far from being able to obtain for me the post he had promised, his interest at court was so low, that he could scarce provide for a superannuated footman once a year, in the Customs or Excise; -that it was a common thing for him to amufe strangers whom his jackals ran down, with such affurances and careffes as he had bestowed on me, until he had stript them of their c. sh and every thing valuable about them; -very often of their chaffity. and then leave them a prey to want and infamy; that he allowed his fervants no other wages than that part of the speil which they could glean by their induffry; and the whole of his conduct towards me was fo glaring, that no body who knew any thing of mankind could have been imposed upon by his infinuations.

I leave the reader to judge how I relished this piece of information, which precipitated me from the most exalted pinnacle of hope to the lowest abyse of despondence; and well nigh determined me to take Banter's advice, and finish my chagrin with a halter.—I had no room to suspect the veracity of my friend, because, upon recollection, I found every circumstance of Strutwell's behaviour exactly tallying with the character he had described: His hugs, embraces, squeezes, and eager looks, were now no longer a mystery; no more than his desence of Petronius, and the jealous

frown

frown of his valet de chambre who, it seems, had been the favourite pathic of his lord.

(%)©©©©©©©©©©©©©©©<mark>%2</mark>

CHAP. LII.

I attempt to recover my watch and jewel, but to no turpose --- resolve to revenge myself on Strutwell by my importanity --- am reduced to my last guinea - obliged to inform Strap of my nece Hity, who is almost distracted with the news - but nevertheless obliged to pawn my best sword for present subsistence --that small supply being exhausted, I am almost stupisted with my misfortunes -- go to the gaming table, by the advice of Banter, and come off with unexpected success. -- Strap's extacy. - Mrs. Gawkey waits upon me, professes remorse for ker persidy, and implores my assistance. - I do myself a piece of justice by her means, and afterwards reconcile ber to ber father.

Banter, who reproached me with great indignation for having thrown away upon rascals, that which, had it been converted into ready money, would have supported the rank of a gentleman for some months, and enabled me, at the same time, to oblige my friends.

Stupisied as I was, I could easily divine the source of his concern, but sneaked away in a solitary manner, without yielding the least answer to his expostulations; and began to deliberate with myself in what manner I should attempt to retrieve the moveables I had so solishly lost.—I should have thought it no Ha

0

13

n

robbery to take them again by force, could I have done it without any danger of being detected; but as I could have no fuch opportunity, I refolved to work by finesse, and go immediately to the lodgings of Straddle, where I was fo fortunate as to find him -" My Lord, (faid 1) I have just now recollected, that the diamond I had the honour of prefenting to vou, is loofened a little in the focket, and there is a young fellow just arrived from Paris, who is " reckoned the best jeweller in Europe; I knew him in France, and if your Lordship will give me leave, " will carry the ring to him to be fet to rights."-His lordship was not to be caught in this snare—he thanked me for my offer, and told me, that having himself observed the defect, he had already fent it to his own jeweller to be mended .- And indeed, by this time I believe it was in the jeweller's hands, though not in order to be mended, for it stood in need of no alteration.

Baulked in this piece of politicks, I curfed my fimplicity; but refolved to play a furer game with the Earl, which I thus devised .- I did not doubt of being admitted into familar conversation with him, as before, and hoped by some means to get the watch into my hand, then on pretence of winding or playing with it, drop it on the floor, when in all probability the fall would disorder the work so as to stop its motion: This event would furnish me with an opportunity of infifting upon carrying it away in order to be repaired; and then I should have been in no hurry to bring it back .- What pity it was I could not find an occasion of putting this fine scheme in execution! When I went to renew my vifit to his Lordship, my access to the parlour was as free as ever; but after I had waited some time, the valet de chambre came in with his Lord's compliments, and a defire to fee me to-morrow at his levee, he being at prefent fo much indisposed that he could not see company.-I

interpreted this message into a bad omen, and came away muttering curses against his Lordship's politeness, and ready to go to logger-heads with myself for being so egregiously duped.—But that I might have some satisfaction for the loss I had sustained, I besieged him closely at his levee, and persecuted him with my solicitations; not without faint hopes indeed of reaping something more from my industry, than the bare pleasure of making him uneasy; though I could never obtain another private hearing, during the whole course of my attendance; neither had I resolution enough, to undeceive Strap, whose looks in a little time were so whetted with impatience, that whenever I came home, his eyes devoured me,

as it were, with eagerness of attention.

At length, however, finding myfelf reduced to my last guinea, I was compelled to disclose my necessity, though I endeavoured to sweeten the discovery by rehearing to him the daily affurances I received from my patron.—But these promises were not of efficacy fufficient to support the spirits of my friend, who no fooner understood the lowness of my finances, than uttering a dreadful groan, he exclaimed; " In the " name of God, what shall we do?"-In order to comfort him, I faid, that many of my acquaintance, who were in a worfe condition than we, supported, notwithstanding, the character of gentlemen; and advising him to thank God that we had as yet incurred no debt, proposed he should pawn my sword of fleel inlaid with gold, and trust to my discretion for the rest. This expedient was wormwood and gall to poor Strap, who, in fpite of his invincible affection for me, still retained notions of economy and expence fuitable to the narrowness of his education; nevertheless he complied with my request, and raised feven pieces on the fword in a twinkling .- This supply, inconsiderable as it was, made me as happy for the present, as if I had kept five hundred H 3 pounds pounds in bank; for by this time I was so weil skilled in procrastinating every troublesome reflection, that the prospect of want seldom affected me very much, let it be ever so near .- And now indeed it was nearer than I imagined; my landlord having occasion for money, put me in mind of my being indebted to him five guineas in lodging; and telling me he had a fum to make up, begged I would excufe his importunity, and discharge the debt .- Though I could ill spare so much cash, my pride took the refolution of disbursing it. This I did in a cavalier manner, after he had written a discharge, telling him with an air of fcorn and refentment, I faw he was resolved that I should not be long in his books; while Strap, who stood by, and knew my circumstances, wrung his hands in secret, gnawed his nether lip, and turned yellow with defpair .- Whatever appearance of indifference my vanity enabled me to put on, I was thunderstruck with this demand, which I had no fooner fatisfied, than I hastened into company, with a view of beguiling my cares with conversation, or of drowning them with wine.

After dinner, a party was accordingly made in the coffee-house, from whence we adjourned to the tavern, where, inflead of sharing the mirth of the company, I was as much chagrined at their good-humour as a damned foul in hell would be at a glimple of heaven.—In vain did I swallow bumper after bumper! the wine had loft its effect upon me, and far from raising my dejected spirits, could not even lay me asleep. - Banter, who was the only intimate I had (Strap excepted) perceived my anxiety, and when we broke up, reproached me with pufillanimity, for being cast down at any disappointment that such a rascal as Strutwell could be the occasion of.—I told him I did not at all fee how Strutwell's being a rafcal alleviated my misfortune; and gave him to understand that my present grief did not so much proceed from that disappointment, appointment, as from the low ebb of my fortune, which was funk to fomething less than two guineas. At this declaration, he cried, "Psha! is that all?" and affured me, there was a thousand ways of living in town without a fortune, he himself having subfifted many years entirely by his wit. I expressed an eager defi e of being acquainted with some of these methods, and he, without further expostulation, bade me follow him. He conducted me to a house under the pizzzas in Covent-Garden, which we entered, and having delivered our fwords to a grim fellow who dema ded them at the foot of the stair-case, ascended to the second story, where I saw multitudes of people flanding round two gaming tables, loaded in a manner with gold and filver .- My conductor told me this was the house of a worthy Scotch Lord, who using the privilege of his peerage, had fet up publick gaming tables, from the profits of which he drew a comfortable livelihood. —He then explained the difference between the fitters and the betters; characterized the first as old rooks, and the last as bubbles; and advised me to try my fortune at the filver table by betting a crown at a time.-Before I would venture any thing, I confidered the company more particularly, and there appeared fuch a groupe of villanous faces, that I was struck with horror and aftonishment at the fight! fignified my furprise to Banter, who whispered in my ear, that the bulk of those present were sharpers, highwaymen, and apprentices, who having embezzled their mafters cash, made a desperate push in this place, to make up their deficiencies. - This account did not encourage me to hazard any part of my finall pittance; but at length being reazed by the importunities of my friend, who affured me there was no danger of being ill uled, because people were hired by the owner to see justice done to every body, I began by risquing one shilling, and in lefs than an hour my winning amounted to thirty. H 4

r

n

.

P

lt

15

d

d

Convinced by this time of the fairness of the game, and animated with success, there was no need of surther persuasion to continue the play: I lent Banter (who seldom had any money in his pocket) a guinea, which he carried to the gold table and lost in a moment. — He would have borrowed another, but sinding me deaf to his arguments, went away in a pet. — Mean while my gain advanced to fix pieces, and my desire of more increased in proportion; so that I moved to the higher table, where I laid half a guinea on every throw, and fortune still savouring me, I became a sitter, in which capacity I remained until it was broad day; when I found myself, after many vicissitudes, one hundred and sifty guineas in pocket.

Thinking it now high time to retire with my booty, I asked if any body would take my place, and made a motion to rise; upon which an old Gascon. who fat opposite to me, and of whom I had won a little money, started up with fury in his looks, crying, " Refez foutre, restez, il faut donner moi mon ra-" vanchio!" At the same time, a Jew who sat near the other, infinuated that I was more beholden to art than fortune, for what I had got; that he had obferved me wipe the table very often, and that some of the divisions seemed to be greafy. This intimation produced a great deal of clamour against me, especially amongst the losers, who threatened with many oaths and imprecations to take me up by a warrant as a sharper, unless I would compromise the affair by refunding the greatest part of my winning.-Though I was far from being eafy under this accufation, I relied upon my innocence, threatened in my turn to profecute the Jew for defamation, and boldly offered to fubmit my cause to the examination of any justice in Westminster; but they knew themselves too well to put their characters on that iffue, and finding I was not to be intimidated into any concession, dropt their plea, and made way for me to withwithdraw.—I would not, however, stir from the table, until the Israelite had retracted what he said to my disadvantage, and asked pardon before the whole

affembly.

As I marched out with my prize, I happened to tread upon the toes of a tall raw-boned fellow, with a hooked nofe, fierce eyes, black thick eye brows, a pig-tail wig of the fame colour, and a formidable hat pulled over his forehead, who stood gnawing his fingers in the crowd, and no fooner felt the application of my shoe-heel, than he roared out in a tremendous voice, "Blood and wounds! you fon of a "whore, what's that for?"—I asked pardon with a great deal of submission, and protested I had no intention of hurting him; but the more I humbled myself the more he fformed, and infifted upon gentlemanly fatisfaction, at the fame time provoking me with fcandalous names that I could not put up with; fo that I gave a loofe to my passion, returned his Billingfgate, and challenged him to follow me down to the piazzas. - His indignation cooling as mine warmed, he refused my invitation, faying, he would choose his own time, and returned towards the table, muttering threats, which I neither dreaded, nor diftinctly heard; but descending with great deliberation, received my fword from the door-keeper, whom I gratified with a guinea, according to the custom of the place, and went home in a rapture of joy.

My faithful valet, who had fat up all night in the utmost uneasiness on my account, let me in with his face besubbered with tears, and followed me to my chamber, where he stood silent like a condemned criminal, in expectation of hearing that every shilling was spent.—I guessed the situation of his thoughts, and assuming a sullen look, bade him setch me some water to wash. — He replied, without listing his eyes from the ground, "In my simple conjecture, "you have more occasion for rest, not having (I

H 5 66 fuppo

" suppose) flept these four and twenty hours."bring me some water," (faid I in a peremptory tone;) upon which he fneaked away shrugging his shoulders. Before he returned I had spread my whole flock on the table in the most oftentatious manner; fo that when it first saluted his view, he stood like one intranced, and having rubbed his eyes more than once, to affure himfelf of his being awake, broke out into, "Lord have mercy upon us, what a vaff trea-" fure is here !" " Tis all our own, Strap, (faid 1;) take what is necessary, and redeem the sword im-" mediately."—He advanced towards the table, flopt short by the way, looked at the money and me by turns, and with a wildness in his countenance, produced from joy checked by distrust, cried, " I dare " fay, it is honeftly come by." To remove his fcruples, I made him acquainted with the whole story of my success, which when he heard, he danced about the room in an extafy, crying, "God be or praised! --- a white stone! --- God be praised! a white stone!" So that I was afraid the sudden change of fortune had difordered his intellects, and that he was run mad with joy .- Extremely concerned at this event, I attempted to reason him out of his frenzy, but to no purpole; for, without regarding what I faid, he continued to frisk up and down, and repeat his rhapfody of "God be praised! a white " stone!" At last I rose in the utmost consternation, and laying violent hands upon him, put a stop to his extravagance, by fixing him down to a fettee that was in the room.—This constraint banished his delirium; he started, as if just awoke, and terrified at my behaviour, cried, "What is the matter?" When he learned the cause of my apprehension, he was ashamed of his transports, and told me, that in mentioning the white stone, he alluded to the Dies fasti of the Romans, albo lapide notati.

Having no inclination to fleep, I fecured my cash, dreffed, and was just going abroad, when the fervant of the house told me, there was a gentlewoman at the door, who wanted to fpeak with me .- Surprifed at this information, I bade Strap shew her up, and in less than a minute saw a young woman of a: shabby decayed appearance enter my room. half a dozen curtieys, the began to fob, and told me her name was Gawky; upon which information I immediately recollected the features of Miss Lavement, who had been the first occasion of my misfortunes .-Though I had all the reason in the world to resent her treacherous behaviour to me, I was moved at her diftrefs, and professing my forrow at seeing her so reduced, defired her to fit, and inquired into the particulars of her fituation .- She fell upon her knees, and implored my forgiveness for the injuries she had done me, protesting before God, that she was forced, against her inclination, into that hellish conspiracy which had almost deprived me of my life, by the entreaties of her husband, who having been afterwards renounced by his father on account of his marriage with her, and unable to support a family on his pay, left his wife at her father's house, and went with the regiment to Germany, where he was broke for mifbehaviour at the battle of Deitingen, fince which time she had heard no tidings of him. She then gave me to understand with many symptoms of penitence, that it was her misfortune to bear a child four months after marriage, by which event her parents were so incensed, that she was turned out of doors with the infant, that died foon after; and had hitherto fubfifted in a miserable indigent manner, on the extorted charity of a few friends, who were now quite tired. of giving; that not knowing where or how to support herfelf one day longer, she had fled for succour even to me, who of all mankind had the least cause to affift her, relying upon the generofity of my difpo-H 6

fition, which, she hoped, would be pleased with this opportunity of avenging itself in the noblest manner, on the wretch who had wronged me.—I was very much affected with her discourse, and having no cause to suspect the sincerity of her repentance, raised her up, freely pardoned all she had done against me, and promised to bestiend her as much as lay in my

power.

Since my last arrival in London, I had made no advances to the apothecary, imagining it would be impossible for me to make my innocence appear, so unhappily was my accusation circumstanced: Strap indeed had laboured to justify me to the school-master; but far from fucceeding in his attempt, Mr. Concordance dropt all correspondence with him, because he refused to quit his connexion with me. - Things being in this fituation, I thought a fairer opportunity of vindicating my character could not offer, than that which now presented itself; -I therefore stipulated with Mrs. Gawky, that before I would yield her the least assistance, she should do me the justice to clear my reputation, by explaining upon oath before a magistrate, the whole of the conspiracy, as it had been executed against me.-When she had given me this fatisfaction, I presented her with five guineas, a sum to much above her expectation, that the could scarce believe the evidence of her fenfes, and was ready to worship me for my benevolence. The declaration figned with her own hand, I fent to her father, who, upon recollecting and comparing the circumstances of my charge, was convinced of my integrity, and waited on me next day, in company with his friend the schoolmaster, to whom he had communicated my vindication. - After mutual falutation, Monsieur Lavement began a long apology for the unjust treatment I had received; but I faved him a good deal of breath, by interrupting his harangue, and affuring him, that far from entertaining a refentment against him,

him, I thought myself obliged to his lenity, which allowed me to escape, after such strong presumptions of guilt appeared against me. Mr. Concordance thinking it now his turn to speak, observed, that Mr. Random had too much candour and fagacity to be disobliged at their conduct, which, all things confidered, could not have been otherwise, with any honesty of intention. "Indeed, (faid he) if the plot " had been unravelled to us by any supernatural in-" telligence; if it had been whifpered by a genie. communicated by a dream, or revealed by an angel " from on high, we should have been to blame in " crediting ocular demonstration; -but as we were " left in the mist of mortality, it cannot be expected " we should be incapable of imposition. - I do as-" fure you, Mr. Random, no man on earth is more of pleased than I am at this triumph of your cha-" racter; and as the news of your misfortune panged " me to the very entrails, this manifestation of your " innocence makes my midrif quiver with joy."-I thanked him for his concern, defired them to undeceive those of their acquaintance who judged harshly of me, and having treated them with a glass of wine, represented to Lavement the deplorable condition of his daughter, and pleaded her cause so effectually, that he confented to fettle a small annuity on her for life; but could not be persuaded to take her home, because her mother was so much incensed that she would never fee her.

$\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} \partial_x^2 \partial_x^2 \partial_y^2 \partial_$

CHAP. LIH.

I purchase new clothes — reprimand Strutwell and Straddle. ——Banter proposes another matrimonial scheme. ——I accept of his
terms ——set out for Bath in a stage coach,
with the young lady and her mother ——
the behaviour of an officer and lawyer, our
fellow travellers, described ———a smart
dialogue between my mistres and the captain.

HAVING finished this affair to my fatisfac-I tion, I found myself perfectly at ease, and looking upon the gaming-table as a certain resource for a gentleman in want, became more gay than ever. -Although my clothes were almost as good as new, I grew ashamed of wearing them, because I thought every body, by this time, had got an inventory of my wardrobe. - For which reason, I disposed of a good part of my apparel to a salesman in Monmouthfreet, for half the value, and bought two new fuits with the money. I likewise purchased a plain gold watch, despairing of recovering that which I had so foolifhly given to Strutwell, whom, notwithstanding, I still continued to visit at his levee, until the embassador he had mentioned, set out with a secretary of his own choosing.—I thought myself then at liberty to expostulate with his lordship, whom I treated with great freedom in a letter, for amufing me with vain hopes, when he neither had the power nor inclination to provide for me.-Nor was I less reserved with Straddle, whom I in person reproached for misreprefenting to me the character of Strutwell, which I did

not scruple to aver was infamous in every respect.—
He seemed very much enraged at my freedom, talked a great deal about his quality and honour, and began to make some comparisons which I thought so injurious to mine, that I demanded an explanation with great warmth; and he was mean enough to equivocate, and condescend in such a manner, that I lest

him with a hearty contempt of his behaviour.

About this time, Banter, who had observed a surprifing and fudden alteration in my appearance and disposition, began to inquire very minutely into the cause; and as I did not think fit to let him know the true state of the affair, lest he might make free with my purfe, on the strength of having proposed the scheme that filled it, I told him that I had received a small supply from a relation in the country, who at the same time had promised to use all his interest (which was not small) in foliciting some post for me that should make me easy for life. - " If that be the " case (said Banter) perhaps you won't care to mor-" tify yourfelf a little, in making your fortune ano-" ther way. I have a relation who is to fet out for "Bath next week, with an only daughter, who be-" ing fickly and decrepit, intends to drink the " waters for the recovery of her health .- Her father, " who was a rich Turkey merchant, died about a " year ago, and left her with a fortune of twenty " thousand pounds, under the sole management of " her mother, who is my kinswoman. I would " have put in for the plate myfelf, but there is a " breach at present between the old woman and me. " - You must know, that some time ago I bor-" rowed a small sum of her, and promised, it seems, " to pay it before a certain time; but being disap-" pointed in my expectation of money from the " country, the day elapsed, without my being able " to take up my note; upon which she wrote a " peremptory letter, threatening to arrest me, if I

es did not pay the debt immediately: Nettled at this or precise behaviour, I sent a damned severe answer, which enraged her fo much, that she actually took out a writ against me. - Whereupon, finding the thing grow ferious, I got a friend to advance the er money for me, discharged the debt, went to her 66 house, and abused her for her unfriendly dealing. -She was provoked by my reproaches, and fcold-46 ed in her turn. The little deformed urchin joined her mother with fuch virulence and volubility of tongue, that I was fain to make my retreat, after having been honoured with a great many fcandalous epithets, which gave me plainly to under-" fland that I had nothing to hope from the efteem of the one, or the affection of the other.—As they are both utter strangers to life, it is a thousand to one that the girl will be picked up by some scoundrel or other at Bath, if I don't provide for her otherwise.—You are a well looking fellow, Random, and can behave as demurely as a quaker. Now if you will give me an obligation for five hunee dred pounds, to be paid fix months after your mares riage, I will put you in a method of carrying her " in spite of all opposition."

This proposal was too advantageous for me, to be refused: The writing was immediately drawn up and executed; and Banter giving me notice of the time when, and the stage coach in which they were to set out, I bespoke a place in the same convenience, and having hired a horse for Strap, who was charmed with the prospect, set forward accord-

ingly.

As we embarked before day, I had not the pleasure for some time of seeing Miss Snapper (that was the name of my mistres) nor even of perceiving the number and sex of my sellow-travellers, although I guessed that the coach was full, by the difficulty I found in seating myself.—The first five minutes

passed

passed in a general filence, when all of a sudden, the coach heeling to one fide, a boisterous voice pronounced, " To the right and left, cover your flanks, " damme! whiz!" I eafily discovered by the tone and matter of this exclamation, that it was untered by a fon of Mars; neither was it hard to conceive the profession of another person who sat opposite to me, and observed, that we ought to have been well satisfied of the fecurity, before we entered upon the premises. -These two sallies had not the defired effect: We continued a good while as mute as before, till at length, the gentleman of the fword, impatient of longer filence, made a fecond effort, by fwearing, he had got into a meeting of quakers .- " I believe fo " too, (faid a shrill female voice, at my left hand) " for the spirit of folly begins to move." -" Out "with it then, madam," (replied the foldier.)-"You feem to have no occasion for a midwife," (cried the Lady.)-" D-n my blood! (exclaimed "the other) a man can't talk to a woman, but she " immediately thinks of a midwife." - " True, Sir, " (faid the) I long to be delivered."-" What! of a " mouse, madam?" (said he.)-" No, Sir, (said she) " of a fool." -" Are you far gone with a fool?" (said he)-" Little more than two miles," (said she.) -" By Gad, you're a wit, madam!" (cried the officer)—" I wish I could with any justice return the compliment," (said the lady.)—" Zounds, I " have done," (faid he.) - " Your bolt is foon shot, " according to the old proverb," (aid she.)—The warrior's powder was quite spent; the lawyer advised him to drop the profecution, and a grave matron, who fat on the left hand of the victorious wit, told her, she must not let her tongue run so fast among strangers. This reprimand, softened with the appellation of child, convinced me that the fatirical lady was no other than Miss Snapper, and I resolved to regulate my conduct accordingly. The champion finding himfelf

himself so smartly handled, changed his battery, and began to expatiate on his own exploits. - "You " talk of shot, madam, (said he) damme! I have both " given and received some shot in my time. - I " was wounded in the shoulder by a pistol ball at " Dettingen, where-I say nothing-but by G-d! " if it had not been for me-all's one for that-I "despise boasting, d-me! whiz!"—So saying he whistled one part and hummed another of the Black Joke; then addressing himself to the lawyer, went on thus: "Wouldn't you think it damned hard, after 46 having, at the risk of your life, recovered the " standard of a regiment, that had been loft, to " receive no preferment for your pains! I don't choose to name no names, fink me! but how omever, this I will refer, by G-d, and that is this, a musqueteer of the French guards, having taken a " flandard from a certain cornet of a certain regi-"ment, damme! was retreating with a prize as fast " as his horse's heels could carry him, fink me! "Upon which, I fnatched up a firelock that belonged to a dead man, damme! whiz! and shot his " horse under him, d-n my blood! The fellow got " upon his feet and began to repose me, upon " which I charged my bayonet breast high, and ran him through the body by G-d!-One of his comrades coming to his affiftance, fhot me in the " shoulder, as I told you before; and another gave " me a confusion on the head with the butt end of " his carbine; but damme, that did not fignify. I 66 killed one, put the other to flight, and taking up the standard carried it off very deliberately. - But " the best joke of all was, the son of a b-ch of a cornet who had furrendered it in a cowardly " manner, feeing it in my possession, demanded it from " me, in the front of the line. - " D-n my blood, " (fays he) where did you find my standard?" (fays " he)-" D-n my blood (faid I)-where (faid I) did .. you you lose it!" (said I)—" That's nothing to you (says he) 'tis my standard (says he) and by G—d I'll have it," (says he)—" D -n--ti -n seize me (says I) if you shall (says I) till I have first delivered it to the General (says I;) and accordingly I went to the head quarters, after the battle, and delivered it to my Lord Stair, who promised to do for me, but I am no more than a poor lieu-

" tenant still, d-n my blood."

ď

u

h

I

1

I

e

k

n

r

e

0

,

a

t

d

S

t

n

n

S

e

e

of I

a

y

n

1,

d

u

Having vented this repetition of expletives, the lawyer owned he had not been requited according to his deferts; observed that the labourer is always worthy of his hire, and asked if the promise was made before witnesses, because in that case the law would compel the General to perform it; --- but understanding that the promise was made over a bottle, without being restricted to time or terms, he pronounced it not valid in law, proceeded to inquire into the particulars of the battle, and affirmed, that although the English had drawn themselves into a premunire at first, the French managed their cause so lamely in the course of the dispute, that they would have been utterly nonfuited, had they not obtained a noli-profequi. - In spight of these enlivening touches, the conversation was like to suffer another long interruption; when the lieutenant, unwilling to conceal any of his accomplishments, that could be displayed in his present situation, offered to regale the company with a fong; and interpreting our filence into a defire of hearing, began to warble a fashionable air, the first stanza of which he pronounced thus:

" To yon flagrant beau repair;

[&]quot; Would you task the moon-ty'd hair,

Where waving with the popling vow,
The bantling fine will shelter you, &c.

The sense of the rest he perverted as he went on, with fuch furprifing facility, that I could not help thinking he had been at some pains to burlefque the performance. - Miss Snapper ascribed it to the true cause. namely ignorance; and when he asked her how she relished his musick, answered, that in her opinion, the musick and the words were much of a piece.-" O d-n my blood! (faid he) I take that as a high " compliment; for every body allows the words are " damnable fine."-" They may be so (replied the 66 lady) for aught I know, but they are above my comprehension."- " I an't obliged to find you " comprehension, madam, curse me!" (cried he) -" No, nor to speak sense neither," (said she)-"D-n my heart (faid he) I'll speak what I please." -Here the lawyer interposed, by telling him there were fome things he must not speak .- And upon being defied to give an inflance, mentioned Treason and Defamation.—" As for the king (cried the Soldier) "God bless him-I eat his bread, and have lost " blood in his cause, therefore I have nothing to say es to him-but by G-d, I dare fay any thing to any " other man."—" No (said the lawyer) you dare of not call me a rogue."—" Damme, for what?" faid the other- "Because (replied the counsellor) I " should have a good action against you, and recover." -" Well, well (cried the officer) if I dare not call "-This you rogue, I dare think you one, damme!"-This stroke of wit he accompanied with a loud laugh of felf-approbation, which unluckily did not affect the audience, but effectually filenced his antagonist, who did not open his mouth for the space of an hour, except to clear his pipes with three hems, which, however, produced nothing.

CHAP. LIV.

Day breaking, I have the pleasure of viewing the person of Miss Snapper, whom I had not seen before—the soldier is witty upon me is offended, talks much of his valour is reprimanded by a grave gentlewoman - we are alarmed with the cry of bighwaymen — I get out of the coach, and ftand on my own defence — they ride off without having attacked us - I pursue them --- one of them is thrown from his borse and taken — I return to the coach—am complimented by Miss Snapper -- the captain's behaviour on this occasion -- the prude reproaches me in a soliloquy—.I upbraid her in the same manner——the behaviour of Mrs. Snapper at breakfast, disobliges methe lawyer is witty upon the officer, who threatens bim.

In the mean time, day breaking in upon us, difcovered to one another, the faces of their fellowtravellers; and I had the good fortune to find my mistress not quite so deformed nor disagreeable as she had been represented to me.—Her head, indeed, bore some resemblance to a harchet, the edge being represented by her sace; but she had a certain delicacy in her complexion, and a great deal of vivacity in her eyes, which were very large and black; and though the protuberance of her breast, when considered alone, seemed to drag her sorwards, it was easy to perceive

b

1:

fe

u

6

61

C

C

1

.

(

F

an equivalent on her back which balanced the other. and kept her body in equilibrio -On the whole, I thought I should have great reaf in to congratulate myfelf, if it should be my fate to possels twenty thousand rounds encumbered with fuch a wife. I began therefore to deliberate about the most probable meins of acquiring the conquest, and was so much engrossed by this idea, that I scarce took any notice of the rest of the people in the coach, but revolved my prospect in silence; while the conversation was maintained as before, by the object of my hopes, the fon of Mars, and the tarrifter, who by this time had recollected himfelf, and talked in terms as much as ever .- At length a dispute happened, which ended in a wager, to be determined by me, who was fo much absorpt in contemplation, that I neither heard the reference nor the quetion which was put to me by each in his turn; affronted at my supposed contempt, the soldier with great vociferation, twore, I was either dumb or deaf, if not both, and that I lookel as if I could not fay Bob to a goofe. - Aroused at this observation, I fixed my eyes upon him, and pronounced with emphasis, the interjection Boh! Upon which he cocked his hat in a fierce manner, and cried, " Damme, Sir, what "d'ye mean by that?"-Had I intended to answer him, which by the bye was not my defign, I should have been anticipated by Miss, who told him, my meaning was to shew that I could cry Boh! to a goole; and laughed very heartily at my laconic reproof.—Her explanation and mirth did not help to appease his wrath, which broke out in several martial infinuations, such as-" I do not understand such " freedoms, damme! - D-n my blood! I'm'a " gentleman, and bear the King's commission. "Sblood! some people deserve to have their noses " pulled for their impertinence."- I thought to have checked these ejaculations by a frown; because he had talked fo much of his valour, that I had long ago ago rated him an ass in a lion's skin; but this expedient did not answer my expectation; he took umbrage at the contraction of my brows, swore he did not value my fulky look a fig's end, and protested he feared no man breathing .- Miss Snapper said, the was very glad to find heifelf in company with a man of fo much courage, who, the did not doubt, would protect us all from the attempts of highwaymen, during our journey .- " Make yourfelf perfectly eafy on that head, " madam, (replied the officer;) I have got a pair of " pistols (here they are) which I took from a horse " officer at the battle of Dettingen-they are double " loaded, and if any highwayman in Eng'and robs wou of the value of a pin while I have the honour " of being in your company, d-n my heart."-When he had expressed himself in this manner, a prim gentlewoman, who had fat filent hitherto, opened her mouth, and faid, she wondered how any man could be fo rude as to pull out fuch weapons before ladies .- " Damme, madam, (cried the champion) " if you are so much atraid at fight of a pistol, how " d'ye propo'e to fland fire if there sould be occa-" fion." - She then told him, that if the thought he could be so unmannerly as to use fire-arns in her prefence, whatever might be the occasion, she would get out of the coach immediately, and walk to the next vi lage, where she might procure a convenience to herself .- Before he could make any answer, my Dulcinea interposed, and observed, that far from being offended at a gertleman's using his arms in his own defence, the thought herfelf very lucky in being along with one by whose valcur she stood a good chance of faving herfelf from being rifled - The prude cast a disdainful look at Mis, and said, that per p'e who have but little to lose, are sometimes the mott folicitous about preserving it.—The old lady was affronted at this inuendo, and took notice, that people ought to be very well informed before they 1peak speak slightingly of other people's fortunes, lest they discover their own envy, and make themselves ridiculous. The daughter declared, that she did not pretend to vie with any body in point of riches; and if the lady who infifted upon non-refistance, would promife to indemnify us all for the lofs we should fustain. she would be one of the first to persuade the captain to submission, in case we should be attacked.—To this propofal, reasonable as it was, the referved lady made no other reply, than a fcornful glance and a tofs of her head. - I was very well pleafed with the spirit of my mistress; and even wished for an opportunity of diffinguishing my courage under her eye, which I believed, could not fail of prepoffeffing her in my fayour; when all of a fudden, Strap rode up to the coach door, and told us in a great fright, that two men on horse-back were croffing the heath (for by this time we had paffed Hounflow) and made directly towards us. This piece of information was no fooner delivered, than Mrs. Snapper began to scream, her daughter grew pale, the other lady pulled out her purse to be in readiness, the lawyer's teeth chattered, while he pronounced, "'Tis no matter-we'll sue the county and recover."—The captain gave evident figns of confusion; and I, after having commanded the coachman to stop, opened the door, jumped out, and invited the warrior to follow me. - But finding him backward and aftonished, I took his pistols, and giving them to Strap, who had by this time alighted, and trembled very much, I mounted on horse back; and taking my own, (which I could better depend upon) from the holfters, cocked them both, and faced the robbers, who were now very near us.—Seeing me ready to oppose them on horseback, and another man armed afoot, they made a halt at fome diffance to reconnoitre us, and after having rode round us twice, myself still facing about as they rode, went off the fame way they came, at a hand gallop. A gentleman's .

-

١,

n

S

e

of

f

f

I

.

e

0

S

-

1

1,

e

it

d

1,

;

1-

d

e

n

0

e

-

VOL. II.

man's fervant coming up with a horse at the same time, I offered him a crown to affift me in pursuing them, which he no fooner accepted, than I armed him with the officer's piftols, and we galloped after the thieves, who trufting to the swiftness of their horses, stopped till we came within shot of them, and then firing at us, put their nags to the full fpeed .-We followed them as fast as our beafts could carry us, but not being fo well mounted as they, our efforts would have been to little purpose, had not the horse of one of them stumbled and thrown his rider with fuch violence over his head, that he lay fenfele's, when we came up, and was taken without the least opposition: while his comrade consulted his own fafety in Right, without regarding the diffress of his friend. We scarce had time to make ourselves mafters of his arms, and tie his hands together, before he recovered his fenses, when learning his situation, he affected furprife, demanded to know by what authority we used a gentleman in that manner, and had the impudence to threaten us with a profecution for robbery.—In the mean time we perceived Strap coming up with a crowd of people, armed with different kinds of weapons; and among the rest a farmer, who no fooner perceived the thief, whom we had fecured, than he cried with great emotion, "There's the fellow who robbed me an hour ago, " of twenty pounds in a canvass bag." --- He was immediately searched, and the money found exactly as it had been described: Upon which, we committed him to the charge of the countryman, who carried him to the town of Hounflow, which it feems the farmer had alarmed; and I, having fatisfied the footman for his trouble, according to promise, returned with Strap to the coach, where I found the captain and lawyer bufy in administering smellingbottles and cordials to the grave lady, who had gone into a fit at the noise of the firing.

When I had taken my feat, Miss Snapper, who from the coach had feen every thing that happened. made me a compliment on my behaviour, and faid. the was glad to fee me returned, without having received any injury: her mother too owned herself obliged to my refolution; and the lawyer told me, that I was entitled by act of parliament to a reward of forty pounds, for having apprehended a highwayman .-- The foldier observed, with a countenance in which impudence and shame struggling, produced fome disorder, that if I had not been in such a damned hurry to get out of the coach, he would have fecured the rogues effectually, without all this buftle and loss of time, by a scheme which my heat and precipitation ruined.—" For my own part, (continued he) " I am always extremely cool on these occasions." --- So it appeared, by your trembling," (faid the young lady.) --- CE Death and damnation (cried he) 66 your fex protects you, madam; if any man on es earth durst tell me so much, I'd send him to hell, "d-n my heart! in an instant."-So saying, he fixed his eyes upon me, and asked if I had seen him tremble ?--- I answered without hesitation, "Yes." " Damme, Sir, (said he) d'ye doubt my courage?" --- I replied, " Very much."--- This declaration quite disconcerted him .--- He looked blank, and pronounced with a faultering voice, "O! 'tis very well---d---n " my blood! I shall find a time." --- I fignified my contempt of him, by thrusting my tongue in my cheek, which humbled him so much, that he scarce fwore another oath aloud during the whole journey.

The precise lady, having recruited her spirits by the help of some strong waters, began a soliloquy, in which she wondered that any man, who pretended to maintain the character of a gentleman, could, for the sake of a little paultry coin, throw persons of honour into such quandaries as might endanger their lives; and professed her surprise, that women were not ashamed to commend such brutality. At the same time vowing, that for the suture she would never set foot in a stage coach, if a private convenience could

be had for love or money.

Nettled at her remarks, I took the same method of conveying my sentiments, and wondered in my turn, that any woman of common sense, should be so unreasonable as to expect that people who had neither acquaintance or connexion with her, would tamely allow themselves to be robbed and mal-treated, merely to indulge her capricious humour. I likewise confessed my astonishment at her insolence and ingratitude in taxing a person with brutality, who deserved her approbation and acknowledgment; and vowed, that if ever she should be assaulted again, I would leave her to the mercy of the spoiler, that she might know the

value of my protection.

This person of honour did not think fit to carry on the altercation any further, but feemed to chew the cud of her resentment, with the crest fallen captain, while I entered into discourse with my charmer, who was the more pleafed with my conversation, as the had conceived a very indifferent opinion of my intellects from my former filence. I should have had cause to be equally satisfied with the sprightliness of her genius, could she have curbed her imagination with judgment; but she laboured under such a profusion of talk, that I dreaded her unruly tongue, and felt by anticipation the horrors of an eternal clack! However, when I considered, on the other hand, the joys attending the possession of twenty thousand pounds, I forgot her imperfections, seized occasion by the fore-lock, and endeavoured to infinuate myself into her affection .. -- The careful mother kept a strict watch over her, and though she could not help behaving civilly to me, took frequent opportunities of discouraging our communication, by reprimanding her for being so free with strangers, and telling her

the must learn to speak less, and think more.---A-bridged of the use of speech, we conversed with our eyes, and I sound the young lady very eloquent in this kind of discourse. In short, I had reason to believe that she was sick of the old gentlewoman's tuition, and that I should find it no difficult matter to su-

perfede her authority.

When we arrived at the place where we were to breakfast, I alighted and helped my mistress out of the coach, as well as her mother, who called for a private room, to which they withdrew, in order to eat by themselves .-- As they retired together, I perceived that Miss had got more twists from nature, than I had before observed, for, she was bent sideways in the figure of an S, so that her progression very much refembled that of a crab .-- The prude also chose the captain for her meis-mate, and ordered breakfast for two only to be brought into another separate room; while the lawyer and I, deferted by the rest of the company, were fain to put up with each other. I was a good deal chagrined at the stately referve of Mrs. Snapper, who I thought did not use me with all the complaifance I deserved; and my companion declared, that he had been a traveller for twenty years, and never knew the stage-coach rules fo much infringed before. As for the honourable gentlewoman, I could not conceive the meaning of her attachment to the lieutenant; and asked the lawyer if he knew for which of the foldier's virtues she admired him? The counfellor facetiously replied, " I supof pose the lady knows him to be an able convey-" ancer, and wants him to make a fettlement in tail." --- I could not help laughing at the archness of the barrister, who entertained me during breakfast, with a great deal of wit of the same kind, at the expence of our fellow-travellers; and among other things faid, he was forry to find the young lady faddled with fuch incumbrances.

When

When we had made an end of our repast, and paid our reckoning, we went into the coach, took our places, and bribed the driver with fixpence, to revenge us on the rest of his fare, by hurrying them away in the midft of their meal. - This task he performed to our fatisfaction, after he had disturbed their enjoyment with his importunate clamour .--- The mother and daughter obeyed the fummons first, and coming to the coach door, were obliged to defire the coachman's affiftance to get in, because the lawyer and I had agreed to shew our resentment by our neglect .-- They were no fooner feated, than the captain appeared as much heated as if he had been purfued a dozen of miles by an enemy; and immediately after him came the lady, not without fome marks of disorder .-- Having helped her up, he entered himfelf, growling a few oaths against the coachman, for his impertinent interruption; and the lawyer comlotted nim by mying, prius through the obstinacy of the defendant, he might have an opportunity to join iffue at the next stage. This last expression gave offence to the grave gentlewoman, who told him, if the was a man, the would make him repent of such obscenity, and thanked God the had never been in such company before.——At this infinuation, the captain thought himself under a necessity of espousing the lady's cause; and accordingly threatened to cut off the lawyer's cars, if he should give his tongue any fuch liberties for the future .--- The poor counsellor begged pardon, and universal filence ensued.

CHAP. LV.

I resolve to ingratiate myself with the mother, and am favoured by accident -the precise lady finds her husband, and quits the coachthe captain is disappointed of his dinnerwe arrive at Bath ___ I accompany Miss Snapper to the long room, where she is attacked by beau N-, and turns the laugh against him - I make love to her, and receive a check — squire her to an assembly, where I am blest with a sight of my dear Narcissa anhich discomposes me so much, that Miss Snapper observing my disorder is at pains to discover the causeis piqued at the occasion, and in our way kome, pays me a sarcastic compliment-I am met by Miss Williams, who is maid and confidante of Narcissa—she acquaints me with her lady's regard for me while under the disguise of a servant, and describes the transports of Narcissa on seeing me at the assembly, in the character of a gentleman-I am surprised with an account of her unt's marriage, and make an appointment to meet Miss Williams next day.

DURING this unsocial interval, my pride and interest maintained a severe conssict, on the subject of Miss Snapper, whom the one represented as unworthy of notice, and the other proposed posed as the object of my whole attention: The advantages and disadvantages attending such a match, were opposed to one another by my imagination; and at length my judgment gave it so much in favour of the first, that I resolved to prosecute my scheme, with all the address in my power. - I thought I perceived fome concern in her countenance, occasioned by my filence, which she no doubt imputed to my disgust at her mother's behaviour; and as I believed the old woman could not fail of ascribing my muteness to the same motive, I determined to continue that sullen conduct towards her, and fall upon some other method of manifesting my esteem for the daughter: nor was it difficult for me to make her acquainted with my fentiments by the expression of my looks, which I modelled into the characters of humility and love; and which were answered by her with all the sympathy and approbation I could defire. But when I began to confider, that without further opportunities of improving my fuccess, all the progress I had hitherto made would not much avail, and that fuch opportunities could not be enjoyed without the mother's permission; I concluded it would be requisite to vanquith her coldness and suspicion by my affiduities and respectful behaviour on the road; and she would in all likelihood invite me to vifit her at Bath, where I did not fear of being able to cultivate her acquaintance as much as would be necessary to the accomplishment of my purpose. And indeed accident furnished me with an opportunity of obliging her fo much, that the could not with any appearance of good manners, forbear to gratify my inclination.

When we arrived at our dining-place, we found all the eatables in the inn bespoke by a certain nobleman, who had got the start of us; and in all likelihood my mistress and her mother must have dined with Duke Humphrey, had I not exerted myself in their behalf, and bribed the landlord with a glass of

wine, to curtail his lordship's entertainment of a couple of fowls and fome bacon, which I fent with my compliments to the ladies. They accepted my treat with a great many thanks, and defired I would favour them with my company at dinner, where I amused the old gentlewoman so successfully, by maintaining a feemingly difinterested ease, in the midst of my civility, that she signified a desire of being better acquainted, and hoped I would be fo kind as to see her sometimes at Bath. - While I enjoyed myself in this manner, the precise lady had the good fortune to meet with her husband, who was no other than gentleman, or in other words, valet de chambre to the very nobleman, whose coach stood at the door. Proud of the interest she had in the house, she affected to shew her power by introducing the captain to her spouse, as a person who had treated her with great civility; upon which he was invited to a share of their dinner; while the poor lawyer, finding himfelf utterly abandoned, made application to me, and was, through my intercession, admitted into our company .- Having fatisfied our appetites, and made ourselves merry at the expence of the person of honour, the civil captain, and complaifant husband, I did myself the pleasure of discharging the bill by flealth, for which I received a great many apologies and acknowledgments from my guests, and we reimbarked at the first warning. The officer was obliged, at last, to appease his hunger with a luncheon of bread and cheefe, and a pint bottle of brandy, which he dispatched in the coach, curfing the inappetence of his lordship, who had ordered dinner to be put back a whole hour.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which was finished next day, when I waited on the ladies to the house of a relation, in which they intended to lodge, and

passing

passing that night at the inn, took lodgings in the

morning for myfelf.

The forenoon was spent in visiting every thing that was worth feeing in the place, in company with a gentleman to whom Banter had given me a letter of introduction; and in the afternoon I waited on the ladies, and found Miss a good deal indisposed with the fatigue of the journey .- As they forefaw they should have occasion for a male acquaintance to squire them at all publick places, I was received with great cordiality, and had the mother's commission to conduct them next day to the long room, which we no fooner entered, than the eyes of every body prefent were turned upon us; and when we had fuffered the martyrdom of their looks for fome time, a whifper circulated at our expence, which was accompanied with many contemptuous smiles, and tittering observations, to my utter shame and confusion.—I did not so much conduct as follow my charge to a place where she feated her mother and herfelf, with aftonishing composure, notwithstanding the unmannerly behaviour of the whole company, which feemed to be affumed merely to put her out of countenance.—The celebrated Mr. N-h, who commonly attends in this place, as master of the ceremonies, perceiving the disposition of the assembly, took upon himself the task of gratifying their ill-nature still further, by exposing my mistress to the edge of his wit. - With this view he approached us, with many bows and grimaces, and after having welcomed Miss Snapper to the place, asked her, in the hearing of all present, if she could inform him of the name of Tobit's doz .- I was fo much incensed at his insolence, that I should certainly have kicked him where he stood, without ceremony, had not the young lady prevented the effects of my indignation, by replying with the utmost vivacity, " His name was N-h, and an ime pudent

dent dog he was." This repartee, fo unexpected and just, raised such an universal laugh at the aggressor, that all his affurance was insufficient to support him 'under their derision; so that after he had endeavoured to compose himself, by taking snuff. and forcing a fmile, he was obliged to fneak off in a very ludicrous attitude; while my Dulcinea was applauded to the skies, for the brilliancy of her wit. and her acquaintance immediately courted by the best people of both fexes in the room. - This event, with which I was infinitely pleased at first, did not fail of alarming me, upon further reflection, when I confidered that the more she was caressed by persons of distinction, the more her pride would be inflamed, and confequently, the obstacles to my success multiplied and enlarged.-Nor were my prefaging fears untrue. --- That very night I perceived her a little intoxicated with the incense she had received, and though the still behaved with a particular civility to me, I forefaw that as foon as her fortune should be known, she would be furrounded with a swarm of admirers, some one of whom might possibly, by excelling me in point of wealth, or in the arts of flattery and scandal, supplant me in her esteem, and find means to make the mother of his party. I refolved therefore to lose no time, and being invited to fpend the evening with them, found an opportunity, in fpite of the old gentlewoman's vigilance, to explain the meaning of my glances in the coach, by paying homage to her wit, and professing myself enamoured of her person.-She blushed at my declaration, and in a favourable manner difapproved of the liberty I had taken, putting me in mind of our being strangers to each other, and desiring I would not be the means of interrupting our acquaintance, by any fuch unfeafonable strokes of gallantry for the future : -- My ardour was effectually checked by this seprimand, which was, however, delivered in such a gentle

gentle manner, that I had no cause to be disobliged; and the arrival of her mother relieved me from a dilemma in which I should not have known how to demean myself a minute longer.—Neither could I resume the easiness of carriage with which I came in, my mistress acted on the reserve, and the conversation beginning to slag, the old lady introduced her kinswoman of the house, and proposed a hand at whist.

While we amused ourselves at this diversion, I understood from the gentlewoman, that there was to be an assembly next night, at which I begged to have the honour of dancing with Miss. She thanked me for the favour I intended her, assured me, she never did dance, but signified a desire of seeing the company; when I offered my service, which was accepted; not a little proud of being exempted from appearing with her, in a situation, that, notwithstanding my profession to the contrary, was not at all

agreeable to my inclination.

Having supped, and continued the game, till such time as the fuccessive yawns of the mother warned me to be gone, I took my leave, and went home, where I made Strap very happy with an account of my progress.—Next day I put on my gayest apparel, and went to drink tea at Mrs. Snapper's, according to appointment, when I found to my inexpressible fatisfaction, that she was laid up with the tooth-ach, and that Miss was to be intrusted to my care.—Accordingly, we fet out for the ball-room, pretty early in the evening, and took possession of a commodious place, where we had not fat longer than a quarter of an hour, when a gentleman dreffed in a green frock came in, leading a young lady, whom I immediately discovered to be the adorable Narcissa! Good heaven! what were the thrillings of my foul at that instant! my reflection was overwhelmed with a torrent of agitation! my heart throbbed with furprifing violence!

violence! a fudden mist overspread my eyes! my ears were invaded with a dreadful found! I panted for want of breath, and in short, was for some moments intranced! - This first tumult subsiding, a crowd of flattering ideas rushed upon my imagination: Every thing that was foft, fenfible, and engaging in the character of that dear creature, recurred to my remembrance, and every favourable circumstance of my own qualifications appeared in all the aggravation of felf-conceit, to heighten my expectation! - Neither was this transport of long duration: The dread of her being already disposed of, intervened, and over-cast my enchanting reverie! My presaging apprehension represented her encircled in the arms of some happy rival, and of consequence for ever loft to me! I was stung with this suggestion, and believing the person who conducted her, to be the husband of this amiable young lady, already devoted him to my fury, and flood up to mark him for my vengeance; when I recollected, to my unspeakable joy, her brother, the fox-hunter, in the person of her gallant. Undeceived so much to my Satisfaction in this particular, I gazed in a frenzy of delight, on the irrefiftible charms of his fifter, who no fooner diffinguished me in the crowd, than her evident confusion afforded a happy omen to my flame. - At fight of me she startled, the roses instantly vanished from her polished cheeks, and returned in a moment with a double glow that overspread her Jovely neck, while her enchanting bosom heaved with strong emotion. I hailed these favourable symptoms, and lying in wait for her looks, did homage with my eyes. - She feemed to approve my declaration, by the complacency of her aspect; and I was fo transported with her discovery, that more than once, I was on the point of making up to her, to disclose the throbbings of my heart in person, had not that profound veneration which her presence always inspired, restrained the unseasonable impulse .-All my powers being ingroffed in this manner, it may eafily be imagined how ill I entertained Miss Snapper, on whom I could not now turn my eyes. without making comparisons very little to her advantage .- It was not even in my power to return d.flinct answers to the questions she asked from time to time. fo that fhe could not help observing my absence of mind: and having a turn for observation, watched my glances, and tracing them to the divine object, discovered the cause of my disorder. That she might, however, be convinced of the truth of her conjecture, the began to interrogate me with regard to Narcissa, and notwithstanding all my endeayours to difguife my fentiments, perceived my attachment by my confusion. - Upon which she asfumed a stateliness of behaviour, and sat silent during the remaining part of the entertainment, ---- At any other time, her fuspicion would have alarmed me; but now I was elevated by my passion above every other consideration .- The mistress of my soul having retired with her brother, I discovered so much uneasiness at my situation, that Miss Snapper proposed to go home; and while I conducted her to a chair, told me she had too great a regard for me to keep me any longer in torment.—I feigned ignorance of her meaning, and having feen her fafely at her lodgings, took my leave, and went home in an extaly, where I disclosed every thing that had happened to my confident and humble fervant Strap, who did not relish the accident so well as I expected; and observed, that a bird in hand is worth two in the bush. - " But however (said he) you know best, " -you know best." -- Next day as I went to the Pump-room, in hopes of feeing or hearing fome tiding of my fair enflaver, I was met by a gentlewoman, who having looked hard at me, cried, " O Christ! " Mr. Random!" Surprised at this exclamation, I examined

N

for

ha

gr

fc

be

of

th

h

fo

f

n

1

t

p

1

examined the countenance of the person who spoke, and immediately recognized my old sweet-heart and fellow-sufferer Miss Williams.

I was mightily pleafed to find this unfortunate woman under fuch a decent appearance, professed my joy at feeing her fo well and defired to know where I should have the pleasure of her conversation. She was as heartily rejoiced at the apparent eafiness of my fortune, and gave me to know, that she, as yet, had no habitation that she could properly call her own; but would want on me at any place I should please to appoint. Understanding that she was unengaged for the present, I shewed her the way to my own lodgings, where, after a very affectionate falutation, the informed me of her being very happy in the fervice of a young lady to whom the was recommended by a former mistress deceased, into whose family she had recommended herself by the honest deceit she had concerted, while she lived with me in the garret at London. - She then expressed a vehement desire to be acquainted with the vicissitudes of my life fince we parted, and excused her curiofity on account of the concern she had for my interest .-I forthwith gratified her request, and when I described my fituation in Suffex, perceived her to attend to my story with particular eagerness. She interrupted me when I had finished that period, with, "Good God! " is it possible!"—and then begged I would be so good as to continue my relation; which I did as briefly as I could, burning with impatience to know the cause of her surprise, about which I had already formed a very interesting conjecture. - When I had brought my adventures down to the prefent day, the feemed very much affected with the different circumstances of my fortune; and saying with a smile, she believed my distresses were now at a period, proceeded to inform me, that the lady whom the ferved was no other than the charming Narciffa, who had honoured her with her confidence for fome time; in consequence of which trust, she had often repeated the story of John Brown, with great admiration and regard; that she loved to dwell upon the particulars of his character, and did not scruple to own a tender approbation of his flame.-I became delirious at this piece of intelligence, strained Miss Williams in my embrace, called her the angel of my happiness, and acted such extravagances, that the might have been convinced of my fincerity, had she not been satisfied of my honour before. As foon as I was in condition to yield attention, she described the present situation of her mistress, who had no fooner reached her lodgings the night before, than the closetted her, and in a rapture of joy, gave her to know that she had seen me at the ball, where I appeared in the character which she always thought my due, with fuch advantage of transformation, that unless my image had been engraven on her heart, it would have been impossible to know me for the person who had worn her aunt's livery; - that by the language of my eyes, she was affured of the continuance of my passion for her, and consequently of my being unengaged to any other; and that though she did not doubt I would speedily fall upon some method of being introduced, she was so impatient to hear of me, that she (Miss Williams) had been fent abroad this very morning, on purpose to learn the name and character I at present bore. - My bosom had been hitherto a stranger to such a flood of joy as now rushed upon it: My faculties were over-born by the tide: It was some time before I could open my mouth; and much longer ere I could utter a coherent sentence--At length, I fervently requested her to lead me immediately to the object of my adoration: But the refisted my importunity, and explained the danger of fuch premature conduct. "How favourable foever (faid she) my lady's inclia nation

« nation towards you may be, you may depend es upon it, she will not commit the smallest trespass on decorum, either in disclosing her own, or in " receiving a declaration of your passion: and altho' the great veneration I have for you, has prompted " me to reveal what she communicated to me in confidence, I know fo well the severity of her " fentiments with respect to the punctilios of her ee fex, that, if the should learn the least surmise of it, she would not only dismiss me as a wretch unworthy of her benevolence, but also for ever " fhun the efforts of your love."- I affented to the justness of her remonstrance, and defired she would affift me with her advice and direction: upon which, it was concerted between us, that for the present, I should be contented with her telling Narcissa, that in the course of her inquiries, she could only learn my name: and that if in a day or two, I could fall upon no other method of being introduced to her mistress. she would deliver a letter from me, on pretence of confulting her happiness; and say that I met her in the streets, and bribed her to this piece of service. Matters being thus adjusted, I kept my old acquaintance to breakfast, and learned, from her conversation, that my rival Sir Timothy had drunk himself into an apoplexy, of which he died five months ago; that the favage was still unmarried; and that his aunt had been feized with a whim which he little expected, and chosen the school-master of the parish for her lord and husband: but matrimony not agreeing with her constitution, she had been hectic and dropsical a. good while, and was now at Bath in order to drink the waters for the recovery of her health; that her niece had accompanied her thither at her request, and attended her with the same affection as before, notwithstanding the mistake she had committed: and that her nephew, who had been exasperated at the loss of her fortune, did not give his attendance out of good

good will, but purely to have an eye on his fifter, left she should likewise throw herself away, without his consent or approbation.—Having enjoyed ourselves in this manner, and made an assignation to meet next day at a certain place, Miss Williams took her leave; and Strap's looks being very inquisitive about the nature of the communication substitute about the nature of the communication substitute affair, to his great association and satisfaction.

CHAP. LVI.

I become acquainted with Narcissa's brother, who invites me to his house——where I am introduced to that adorable creature—after dinner, the squire retires to take his nap—Freeman, guessing the situation of my thoughts, withdraws likewise on pretence of business——I declare my passion to Narcissa——am well received——charmed with her conversation—the squire detains us to supper——I elude his design by a stratagem, and get home sober.

In the afternoon, I drank tea at the house of Mr. Freeman, to whom I had been recommended by Banter; where I had not sat sive minutes, 'till the sox-hunter came in, and by his familiar behaviour, appeared to be intimate with my friend—I was, at sirst, under some concern, lest he should recollect my features; but when I sound myself introduced to him as a gentleman from London, without being discovered, I blessed the opportunity that brought me into his company; hoping, that in the course of our acquaint-

in

tu

fie

W

VI

qı

tr

tr

th

m

p

C

h

2

h

fi

9

f

acquaintance, he would invite me to his house-nor were my hopes frustrated, for as we spent the evening together, he grew extremely fond of my converfation, asked a great many childish questions about France and foreign parts; and feemed fo highly entertained with my answers, that in his cups, he shook me often by the hand, pronounced me an honest fellow, and in fine defired our company at dinner next day, in his own house. - My imagination was fo much employed in anticipating the happiness I was to enjoy next day, that I flept very little that night; but rifing early in the morning, went to the place appointed, where I met my she friend, and imparted to her my fuccess with the squire. - She was very much pleased at the occasion, which (she said) could not fail of being agreeable to Narcissa, who in fpite of her paffion for me had mentioned some scruples relating to my true situation and character, which the delicacy of her fentiments fuggested, and which she believed I would find it necessary to remove, though she did not know how .--- I was a good deal startled at this infinuation, because I foresaw the difficulty I should find in barely doing myself justice; for although it never was my intention to impose myfelf upon any woman, much less on Narcissa, as a man of fortune, I laid claim to the character of a gentleman, by birth, education, and behaviour; and yet (so unlucky had the circumstances of my life fallen out) I should find it a very hard matter to make good my pretentions even to thefe, especially to the last, which was the most essential.-Miss Williams was as fenfible as I, of this my difadvantage, but comforted me with observing, that when once a woman has bestowed her affections on a man, the cannot help judging of him in all respects, with a partiality eafily influenced in his favour ;---- fhe remarked that altho' fome fituations of my life had been low, yet none of them had been infamous; that my indigence indigence had been the crime not of me, but of fortune; and that the miseries I had undergone, by improving the faculties both of mind and body, qualified me the more for any dignified station; and would of consequence, recommend me to the good graces of any fenfible woman; --- fhe therefore advised me to be always open and unreserved to the inquiries of my mistress, without unnecessarily betraying the meanest occurrences of my fate; and trust to the strength of her love and reflection, for the rest . -- The fentiments of this fensible young woman on this, as well as on almost every other subject, perfectly agreed with mine; I thanked her for the care she took of my interests, and promising to behave myself according to her direction, we parted, after she had affured me, that I might depend upon her best offices with her mistress, and that she would from time to time, communicate to me such intelligence as she should procure, relating to my flame .--Having dressed myself to the best advantage, I waited for the time of dinner with the most fearful impatience: and as the hour drew nigh, my heart beat with fuch increased velocity, and my spirits contracted fuch disorder, that I began to suspect my resolution, and even to wish myself disengaged :- At last Mr. Freeman called at my lodgings, in his way, and I accompanied him to the house where all my happiness was deposited .- We were very kindly received by the squire, who sat smoaking his pipe in a parlour, and asked if we chose to drink any thing before dinner; though I never had more occasion for a cordial, I was ashamed to accept his offer, which was also refused by my friend. We fat down (however) and entered into conversation, which lasted half an hour, so that I had time to recollect myself; and (so capricious were my thoughts) even to hope that Narcissa would not appear-when all of a fudden, a fervant coming in, gave us notice that dinner was upon the table---

tha

mo

CO

oth

of

del

the

dre

or

low

inj

WE

H

gu

CO

alc

ail

pa

be

pe

pr

m

en

m

pa

th

fh

ala

gre

to

I

an

for

wi

wh

an

table----and my perturbation returned with fuch violence, that I could scarce conceal it from the company as I ascended the stair-case. --- When I entered the dining-room, the first object that faluted my ravished eyes, was the divine Narcissa, blushing like Aurora, adorned with all the graces that meeknefs, innocence, and beauty can diffuse! I was seized with a giddiness, my knees tottered, and I scarce had strength enough to perform the ceremony of falutation, when her brother flapping me on the shoulder, cried, " Measter Randan, that there is my fister." I approached her with eagerness and fear; but in the moment of our embrace, my foul was agonized with rapture !--- It was a lucky circumstance for us both, that my entertainer was not endued with an uncommon stock of penetration; for our mutual confusion was so manifest, that Mr. Freeman perceived it, and as we went home together, congratulated me on my good fortune, --- But fo far was Bruin from entertaining the least suspicion, that he encouraged me to begin a conversation with my mistress in a language unknown to him, by telling her, that he had brought a gentleman who could jabber with her in French and other foreign lingos, as fast as she pleased: then turning to me, faid, " Odds bods! I " wish you would hold discourse with her, in your " French or Italiano; and tell me if she under-" stands it as well as she would be thought to dothere's her aunt and she will chatter together whole days in it, and I can't have a mouthful of English " for love or money." I consulted the look of my amiable mistress, and found her averse to his proposal, which indeed the declined with a sweetness of denial peculiar to herself, as a piece of difrespect to that part of the company which did not understand the language in question. As I had the happiness of sitting opposite to her, I feasted my eyes much more

q.

e

,

1

1

3

n

1

n

n

e

h

9

1

31

.

e

h

y

)-

of

to

10

t-

re

20

than my palate, which the tempted in vain with the most delicious bits carved by her fair hand, and recommended by her persuafive tongue; -but all my other appetites were fwallowed up in the immenfity of my love, which I fed by gazing incessantly on the delightful object .- Dinner was scarce ended, when the fquire became very droufy, and after feveral dreadful yawns, got up, stretched himself, took two or three turns across the room, begged we would allow him to take a fhort nap, and having laid a fliong injunction on his fifter to detain us till his return, went to his repose without any further ceremony .-He had not been gone many minutes, when Freeman gueffing the fituation of my heart, and thinking he could not do me a greater favour, than to leave me alone with Narcissa, pretended to recollect himself all of a fudden, and flarting up, begged the lady's pardon for half an hour, for he had luckily remembered an engagement of some consequence, that he must perform at that instant; --- so saying, he took his leave, promiting to come back time enough for tea; leaving my mistress and me in great confusion. -- Now that I enjoyed an opportunity of disclosing the pantings of my foul, I had not power to use it .- I studied many pathetic declarations, but when I attempted to give them utterance, my tongue denied its office; and the fat filent, with a downcast look full of anxious alarm, her bosom heaving with expectation of some great event .- At length, I endeavoured to put an end to this folemn paufe, and began with "It is very " furprifing, madam "-Here the found dying away, I made a full stop-while Narcissa starting, blushed, and with a timid accent, answered, "Sir?"---Confounded at this note of interrogation, I pronounced with the most sheepish bashfulness, " Madam!" To which she replied, "I beg pardon .---- I thought you " had spoke to me."—Another pause ensued—I made another effort, and though my voice faultered very much at the beginning, made shift to express myself in this manner: -- " I fay, Madam, 'tis very furof prifing that love should act so inconsistent with itself, as to deprive its votaries of the use of their " faculties, when they have most need of them. Since the happy occasion of being alone with you or presented itself, I have made many unsuccessful attempts to declare a passion for the loveliest of her " fex-a paffion which took poffession of my foul, while my cruel fate compell'd me to wear a servile " difguise so unsuitable to my birth, sentiments, and " let me add, my deserts; yet favourable in one " respect, as it furnished me with opportunities " of feeing and adoring your perfections .-- Yes, " Madam, it was then your dear idea entered my " bosom, where it has lived unimpaired in the midst of numberless cares, and animated me against a "thousand dangers and calamities!"--While I spoke thus, she concealed her face with her fan, and when I ceased speaking, recovering herself from the most beautiful confusion, told me, she thought herself very much obliged by my favourable opinion of her; and that she was very forry to hear I had been unfortunate .-- Encouraged by this gentle reply, I proceeded, owned myself sufficiently recompensed by her kind compassion for what I had undergone, and declared that the future happiness of my life depended solely upon her. -- "Sir, (faid she) I should be very unes grateful, if after the fignal protection you once " afforded me, I should refuse to contribute to-"wards your happiness, in any reasonable conde-"fcension." --- Transported at this acknowledgment, I threw myself at her feet, and begged she would regard my passion with a favourable eye: She was alarmed at my behaviour, intreated me to rife left her brother should discover me in that posture, and to spare her, for the present, upon a subject for which fhe was altogether unprepared. - In consequence of

f

il

ti

66

"

"

66

1

r

,

e

d

e

25

s,

y

ft

2

ce

en

oft

ry

nd

u-

d.

nd

ed

ely

n-

ce

0-

de-

nt,

re-

was

left

and

ich e of this this remonstrance, I rose, assuring her I would rather die than disobey her; but in the mean time begged her to confider how precious the minutes of this opportunity were, and what restraint I put upon my inclination, in facrificing them to her defire .-- She fmiled with unspeakable sweetness, and faid, there would be no want of opportunities, provided I could maintain the good opinion her brother had conceived of me; and I, enchanted by her charms, feized her hand, which I well nigh devoured with kiffes .- But the checked my boldness with a severity of countenance; and defired I would not so far forget myself to her, as to endanger the esteem she had for me; --- she reminded me of our being almost strangers to each other, and of the necessity there was, for her knowing me better, before the could take any refolution in my fayour; and, in short, mingled so much good sense and complacency in her reproof, that I became as much enamoured of her understanding, as I had been before of her beauty, and asked pardon for my presumption with the utmost reverence of conviction .- - She forgave my offence with her usual affability; and sealed my pardon with a look fo full of bewitching tendernels, that for some minutes, my senses were lost in extaly! I afterwards endeavoured to regulate my behaviour according to her defire, and turn the conversation upon a more indifferent subject; but her presence was an unsurmountable obstacle to my defign: while I beheld so much excellence, I found it impossible to call my attention from the contemplation of it! I gazed with unutterable fondness! I grew mad with admiration !-- " My condition is " insupportable! (cried I) I am distracted with pas-" fion! why are you to exquifitely fair?----Why are " you so enchantingly good?—Why has nature dig-" nified you with charms fo much above the standard " of women; and, wretch that I am, how dares er my unworthiness aspire to the enjoyment of such

er perfection."

She was startled at my ravings, reasoned down my transport, and by her irresistible eloquence, soothed my foul into a state of tranquil felicity; but lest I might fuffer a relapfe, industriously promoted other fubjects to entertain my imagination-she chil me for having omitted to inquire about her aunt, who (the affured me) in the midst of all her absence of temper, and detachment from common affairs, often talked of me with uncommon warmth.—I professed my veneration for the good lady, excufed my omiffion, by imputing it to the violence of my love, which engroffed my whole foul, and defired to know the ficuation of her health. - Upon which, the amiable Narciffa repeated what I had heard before, of her marriage, with all the tenderness for her reputation that the subject would admit of; told me she lived with her husband, hard by, and was so much afflicted with the dropfy, and wasted by a consumption, that the had finall hopes of her recovery. - Having expressed my forrow for her distemper, I questioned her about my good friend Mrs. Sagely, who I learned (to my great fatisfaction) was still in good health, and who had by the encomiums she beltowed upon me after I was gone, confirmed the favourable impreffions my behaviour at parting had made on Narciffa's heart. --- The circumstance introduced an inquiry into the conduct of Sir Timothy Thicket, (who she informed me) had found means to incense her brother so much against me, that she sound it impossible to undeceive him; but on the contrary, suffered very much in her own character, by his fcandalous infinuations .- That the whole parish was alarmed, and actually in pursuit of me; so that she had been in the utmost consternation upon my account, well knowing how little my own innocence and her teftimony would have weighed with the ignorance, prejudice,

justice and brutality of those who must have judged me, had I been apprehended—That Sir Timothy having been seized with a sit of the apoplexy, from which with great difficulty he was recovered, began to be apprehensive of death, and to prepare himself accordingly for that great event; as a step of which he sent for her brother, owned with great contrition the brutal design he had upon her, and of consequence acquitted me of the assault, robbery and correspondence with her, which he had laid to my charge; after which consession, and was carried off by a second assault.

Every word that this dear creature spoke, rivetted the chains with which she held me enslaved! My mischievous fancy began to work, and the tempest of my passion to wake again; when the return of Freeman destroyed the tempting opportunity, and enabled me to quell the rifing tumult. -A little while after, the Squire staggered into the room, rubbing his eyes, and called for his tea, which he drank out of a small bowl, qualified with brandy; while we took it in the usual way. Narcissa left us in order to visit her aunt, and when Freeman and I proposed to take our leave, the fox-hunter insisted on our fpending the evening at his house with such obstinacy of affection, that we were obliged to comply. -For my own part, I should have been glad of the invitation, by which, in all likelihood, I should be bleft with more of his fifter's company, had I not been afraid of risking her esteem, by entering into a debauch of drinking with him, which, from the knowledge of his character, I forefaw would happen; but there was no remedy.—I was forced to rely upon the strength of my constitution, which I hoped would refift intoxication longer than the Squire's; and to trust to the good-nature and discretion of my mistress for the reft.

r

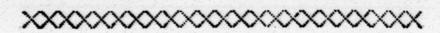
1

Our entertainer resolving to begin betimes, ordered the table to be surnished with liquor and glasses
immediately after tea, but we absolutely resused to
set in for drinking so soon; and prevailed upon him
to pass away an hour or two at whist, in which we
engaged as soon as Narcissa returned.—The savage
and I happened to be partners at first, and as my
thoughts were wholly employed in a more interesting
game, I played so ill that he lost all patience, swore
bitterly, and threatened to call for wine if they would
not grant him another associate. This desire was
gratisted, and Narcissa and I were of a side; he won
for the same reason that made him lose before; I was
satisfied, my lovely partner did not repine, and the
time slipped away very agreeably, until we were told

that supper was served in another room.

The Squire was enraged to find the evening fo unprofitably spent, and wreaked his vengeance on the cards, which he tore, and committed to the flames with many execrations; threatening to make us redeem our loss with a large glass and quick circulation; and indeed we had no fooner supped, and my charmer withdrawn, than he began to put his threats in execution. Three bottles of port (for he drank no other fort of wine) were placed before us, with as many water-glaffes, which were immediately filled to the brim, after his example, by each out of his respective allowance, and emptied in a trice, to the best in Christendom .- Though I swallowed this, and the next as fast as the glass could be replenished, without hesitation or shew of reluctance, I perceived that my brain would not be able to bear many bumpers of this fort; and dreading the perseverance of a champion who began with fuch vigour, I determined to make up for the deficiency of my strength by a stratagem, which I actually put in practice when the second course of bottles was called for .- The wine being ftrong

firong and heady, I was already a good deal discomposed by the dispatch we had made, Freeman's eyes began to reel, and Bruin himself was elevated into a fong, which he uttered with great vociferation .-When I therefore faw the fecond round brought in, I assumed a gay air, entertained him with a French catch on the Sibject of drinking, which, though he did not understand it, delighted him highly, and telling him that your choice spirits at Paris never troubled themselves with glasses, asked if he had not a bowl or cup in the house that would contain a whole quart of wine.- "Odds niggers! (cried he) I have a filver " caudle cup that holds just the quantity, for all the " world-fetch it hither, Numps." - The veffel being produced, I bade him decant his bottle into it, which he having done, I nodded in a very deliberate manner, and faid " Pledge you."-He stared at me for some time, and crying, "What! all at one pull, "measter Randan!"-I answered, "At one pull! "Sir, you are no milk-fop—we shall do you justice." -" Shall you?" (faid he, shaking me by the hand) " odd then, I'll fee it out, an't were a mile to the " bottom .- Here's to our better acquaintance, " meafter Randan." So faying, he applied it to his lips, and emptied it in a breath - I knew the effect of it would be almost instantaneous; therefore taking the cup, began to discharge my bottle into it, telling him he was now qualified to drink with the Cham of Tartary.-I had no fooner pronounced these words, than he took umbrage at them, and after several attempts to spit, made shift to stutter out, " A f-t " for your Chams of T- Tartary! I am a f-" f- free-born Englishman, worth th- three thou-" fand a year, and v-value no man, damme!" Then dropping his jaw, and fixing his eyes, he hickup'd aloud, and fell upon the floor as mute as a flounder .- Mr. Freeman, heartily glad at his defeat, affisted me in carrying him to bed, where we left K 2 him him to the care of his fervants, and went home to our respective habitations, congratulating one another on our good fortune.



CHAP. LVII.

Miss Williams informs me of Narcissa's approbation of my flame——I appease the Squire——write to my mistress, am blessed with an answer——beg leave of her brother to dance with her at a ball; obtain his consent and hers——enjoy a private conversation with her——am perplexed with reflections——have the honour of appearing her partner at a ball——we are complimented by a certain nobleman——he discovers some symptoms of a passion for Narcissa——I am stung with jealousy——Narcissa alarmed, retires——I observe Melinda in the company——the Squire is captivated by her heauty.

Miss williams, who gave me joy of the progress I had made in the affection of her mistress, and blessed me with an account of that dear creature's conversation with her, after she had retired the night before, from our company.—I could scarce believe her information, when she recounted her expressions in my favour, so much more warm and passionate were they than my most sanguine hopes had presaged; and was particularly pleased to hear that she approved of my behaviour to her brother, after she withdrew.—Transported at the news of my happiness, I presented my ring to the messenger, as a testimony of my gratitude

titude and satisfaction; but she was above such mercenary considerations, and refused my compliment with some resentment, saying, she was not a little mortified to see my opinion of her so low and contemptible. I did myself a piece of justice by explaining my behaviour on this head, and to convince her of my esteem, promised to be ruled by her directions in the prosecution of the whole affair, which I had so much at heart, that the repose of my life depended

upon the confequence.

As I fervently wished for another interview, where I might pour out the effusions of my love, without danger of being interrupted, and perhaps reap some endearing return from the queen of my defires; I implored her advice and affiftance in promoting this event :---but she gave me to understand, that Nareissa would make no precipitate compliances of this kind, and that I would do well to cultivate her brother's acquaintance, in the course of which, I should not want opportunities of removing that referve, which my mistress thought herself obliged to maintain during the infancy of our correspondence. In the mean time she promised to tell her lady that I had endeavoured by presents and persuasions, to prevail upon her, (Mis Williams) to deliver a letter from me, which she had refused to charge herself with, until she should know Narcissa's sentiments of the matter; and faid, by these means she did not doubt of being able to open a literary communication between us; which could not fail of introducing more intimate connexions.

I approved of her counsel, and our appointment being renewed for next day, lest her with an intent of falling upon some method of being reconciled to the Squire, who, I supposed, would be offended with the trick we had put upon him. With this view, I consulted Freeman, who, from his knowledge of the fox hunter's disposition, assured me there was no

other method of pacifying him, than that of facrificing ourselves for one night, to an equal match with him in drinking: This expedient I found myfelf necessitated to comply with, for the interest of my passion, and therefore determined to commit the debauch at my own lodgings, that I might run no rifk of being discovered by Narcissa, in a state of brutal degeneracy. Mr. Freeman, who was to be of the party, went, at my defire, to the Squire, in order to engage him, while I took care to furnish myself for his reception. My invitation was accepted, my guests honoured me with their company in the evening, when Bruin gave me to understand that he had drank many tuns of wine in his life, but was never ferved fuch a trick as I had played upon him the night before. I promised to atone for my trespass, and having ordered to every man his bottle, began the contest with a bumper to the health of Narcissa. The toasts circulated with great devotion, the liquor began to operate, our mirth grew noify, and as Freeman and I had the advantage of drinking small French claret, the favage was effectually tamed before our fenses were in the least affected, and carried home in an apoplexy of drunkenness.

I was next morning, as usual, favoured with a visit from my kind and punctual confidente, who telling me, she was permitted to receive my letters for her mistres; I took up the pen immediately, and following the first dictates of my passion, wrote as

follows:

" Dear Madam,

WERE it possible for the powers of utterance to reveal the soft emotions of my
foul; the fond anxiety, the glowing hopes, the
chilling fears, that rule my breath by turns; I
should need no other witness than this paper, to
evince the purity and ardour of that flame your

" charms have kindled in my heart. But alas! ex-" pression wrongs my love! I am inspired with con-" ceptions that no language can convey! Your beauty " fills me with wonder! your understanding with " ravishment, and your goodness with adoration! I " am transported with defire, distracted with doubts, 44 and tortured with impatience! Suffer me then, so lovely arbitress of my fate, to approach you in " person, to breathe in soft murmurs my passion to " your ear, to offer the sacrifice of a heart overflowing with the most genuine and disinterested love; to gaze with extafy on the divine object of my " wishes, to hear the musick of her enchanting " tongue! and to rejoice in her fmiles of approba-" tion, which will banish the most intolerable sus-" pence from the bosom of

" Your enraptured R—R—."

Having finished this effusion, I committed it to the care of my faithful friend, with an injunction to fecond my intreaty with all her eloquence and influence; and in the mean time went to dress, with an intention of vifiting Mrs. Snapper and Mifs, whom I had utterly neglected and indeed almost forgot, fince my dear Narcissa had resumed the empire of my soul. The old gentlewoman received me very kindly, and Miss affected a frankness and gaiety, which, however, I could easily perceive were forced and diffembled; among other things, she pretended to joke me upon my passion for Narcissa, which she averred was nofecret, and asked if I intended to dance with her at the next affembly. I was a good deal concerned to find myself become the town-talk on this subject, lest the Squire, having notice of my inclinations, should disapprove of them, and by breaking off all correspondence with me, deprive me of the opportunities I now enjoyed. But I resolved to use the interest I had with him, while it lasted; and that very night meeting him occasionally, asked his permission to folicit her company at the ball, which he very rea-

dily granted, to my inexpressible satisfaction.

Having been kept awake the greatest part of the night, by a thousand delightful reveries that took possession of my fancy, I got up betimes, and flying to the place of rendezvous, had in a little time the pleafure of feeing Miss Williams approach with a fmile on her countenance, which I interpreted into a good omen. Neither was I mistaken in my presage: She presented me with a letter from the idol of my foul, which, after having kiffed it devoutly, I opened with the utmost eagerness, and was bleffed with her approbation in these terms.

"SIR,

" TO fay I look upon you with indifference, would be a piece of dissimulation, which I 66 think no decorum requires, and no custom can " justify. As my heart never felt an impression that my tongue was ashamed to declare, I will not " fcruple to own myfelf pleafed with your passion, confident of your integrity, and fo well convinced of my own discretion, that I should not hesitate in se granting you the interview you defire, were I not over-awed by the prying curiofity of a malicious world, the censure of which might be fatally pre-" judicial to the reputation of

" Your

" NARCISSA."

No anchorite in the extafy of devotion ever adored a relique with more fervour than that with which I kissed this inimitable proof of my charmer's candour,

generofity and affection! I read it over an hundred times; was ravished with her confession in the beginning; but the subscription of Your Narcissa, yielded me such delight as I had never felt before! My happiness was still increased by Miss Williams, who blessed me with a repetition of her lady's tender expressions in my savour, when she received and read my letter. In short, I had all the reason in the world to believe that this gentle creature's bosom was possessed by a passion for me, as warm, though perhaps

not fo impetuous, as mine for her.

I informed my friend of the Squire's consent to my dancing with Narcissa at the ball, and defired her to tell her mistress, that I would do myself the honour of vifiting her in the afternoon, in consequence of his permission, when I hoped to find her as indulgent as her brother had been complaifant in that particular. Mifs Williams expressed a good deal of joy, at hearing I was fo much in favour with the fox-hunter, and ventured to assure me, that my visit would be very agreeable to my mistress, the rather because Bruin was engaged to dine abroad. This was a circumstance, which I scarce need fay, pleased me.- I went immediately to the long room, where I found him, and affecting to know nothing of his engagement, told him, I would do myself the pleasure to wait upon him in the afternoon, and to present his fifter with a ticket for the ball. --- He shook me by the hand, according to custom, and giving me to understand that he was to dine abroad. defired me to go and drink tea with Narcissa notwithstanding, and promised to prepare her for my visit, in the mean time.

Every thing fucceeding thus to my wish, I waited with incredible impatience for the time, which no sooner arrived, than I hastened to the scene, which my fancy had pre-occupied long before.——I was introduced accordingly, to the dear enchantres, whom

K 5

I found accompanied by Miss Williams, who, on pretence of ordering tea, retired at my approach .-This favourable accident, which alarmed my whole soul, disordered her also. - I found myself actuated by an irrefistible impulse, I advanced to her with eagerness and awe; and profiting by the confusion that prevailed over her, clasped the fair Angel in my arms, and imprinted a glowing kifs upon her lips, more foft and fragrant than the dewy rose-bud just bursting from the stem! Her face was in an instant covered with blushes, her eyes sparkled with resentment; I threw myself at her feet, and implored her pardon. Her love became advocate in my cause; her look softened into forgiveness, the raised me up, and chid me with fo much sweetness of displeasure, that I should have been tempted to repeat the offence, had not the coming of a servant with the tea-board, prevented my presumption. - While we were subject to be interrupted or overheard, we converfed about the approaching ball, at which the promifed to grace me as a partner; but when the equipage was removed, and we were left alone, I refumed the more interesting theme, and expressed myself with such transport and agitation, that my miftress, fearing I would commit some extravagance, rung the bell for her maid, whom the detained in the room, as a check upon my vivacity:-I was not forry for this precaution, because I could unbosom myself without reserve, before Miss Williams, who was the confidante of us both. - I therefore gave a loose to the inspirations of my passion, which operated so successfully upon the tender affections of Narcissa, that she laid aside the constraint she had hitherto wore, and bleffed me with the most melting declaration of her mutual flame !- It was impossible for me to forbear taking the advantage of this endearing condescension. -- She now gently yielded to my embraces, while I encircling all that I held dear within my arms, tasted in advance, the joys of that paradise I hoped in a little time wholly to possess!

—We spent the afternoon in all the extasy of hope that the most servent love exchanged by mutual vows could inspire; and Miss Williams was so much affected with our chaste caresses, which recalled the sad remembrance of what she was, that her eyes were filled with tears.

The evening being pretty far advanced, I forced myfelf from the dear object of my flame, who indulged me in a tender embrace at parting; and repairing to my lodgings, communicated to my friend: Strap every circumstance of my happines, which filled him with fo much pleasure, that it ran over at his. eyes; and he prayed heartily, that no envious devil might, as formerly, dash the cup of bleffing from my lip.-When I reflected on what had happened, and especially on the unreserved protestations of Narcissa's love, I could not help being amazed at her omitting to enquire into the particular circumstances. of life and fortune of one whom she had favoured with her affection, and I began to be a little anxious. about the situation of her finances; well knowing that I should do an irreparable injury to the person my foul held most dear, if I should espouse her, without being able to support her in the rank which was. certainly her due .- I had heard indeed, while I: ferved her aunt, that her father had left her a confiderable fum; and that every body believed she would inherit the greatest part of her kinswoman's dowry, but I did not know how far she might be restricted by the old gentleman's will, in the enjoyment of what: be left her; and I was too well informed of the virtuoso's late conduct, to think my mistress could have any expectations from that quarter.—I confided. however, in the good fense and policy of my charmer, who, I was fure, would not confent to unite her K. 6 fate

fate with mine, before she had fully considered and

provided for the confequence.

The ball night being arrived, I dreffed myfelf in a fuit I had referved for some grand occasion; and having drank tea with Narcissa and her brother, conducted my angel to the scene, where she in a moment eclipted all her female competitors for beauty, and attracted the admiration of the whole affembly. -My heart dilated with pride on this occasion, and my triumph rejected all bounds, when, after we had danced together, a certain nobleman, remarkable for his figure and influence in the beau monde, came up, and in the hearing of all present, honoured us with a very particular compliment, upon our accomplishments and appearance; but this transport was soon checked, when I perceived his lordship attach himself with great affiduity to my miftress; and say some warm things, which, I thought, favoured too much of paffion.-It was then I began to feel the pangs of jealoufy—I dreaded the power and address of my rival -I fickened at his discourse; when she opened her lips to answer, my heart died within me. -- When the smiled, I felt the pains of the damned !- I was enraged at his prefumption; I curfed her complaifance! at length he quitted her, and went to the other fide of the room. - Narcissa suspecting nothing of the rage that inflamed me, put some questions to me, as foon as he was gone, to which I made no reply, but assumed a grim look, which too well denoted the agitation of my breaft, and surprised her not a little. - She no sooner observed my emotion, than she changed colour, and asked what ailed me? but before I could make answer, her brother pulling me by the sleeve, bade me take notice of a lady who fat fronting us, whom I immediately, to my vast astonishment, distinguished to be Melinda, accompanied by her mother, and an elderly Gentleman, whom I did not know. - " Wounds! Mr. Randan," (cried the Squire)

Squire) " is the not a delicate piece of stuff?-"'Sdeath! I have a good mind-if I thought the " was a fingle person."-Notwithstanding the perplexity I was in, I had reflection enough to foresee that my passion might suffer greatly by the presence of this lady, who in all probability would revenge herself upon me for having formerly difgraced her, by spreading reports to my prejudice. - I was therefore alarmed at these symptoms of the Squire's admiration; and for some time did not know what reply to make, when he asked my opinion of her beauty: At length I came to a determination, and told him that her name was Melinda, that she had a fortune of ten thousand pounds, and was said to be under promise of marriage to a certain lord, who deferred his nuptials a few months until he should be of age: I thought this piece of intelligence, which I had myfelf invented, would have hindered him effectually from entertaining any further thoughts of her; but I was egregiously mistaken. The fox-hunter had too much self-sufficiency to despair of success against any competitor on earth. He therefore made light of her engagement, faying, with a fmile of felf-approbation, " Mayhap the will change her mind-what fig-" nifies his being a lord?——I think myself as good " a man as e'er a lord in christendom; —and I'll " fee if a commoner worth three thousand a year " won't serve her turn."-This determination startled me not a little; I knew he would foon discover the contrary of what I advanced, and as I believed he would find her ear open to his addresses, did not doubt of meeting with every obstacle in my amour, that her malice could invent, and her influence execute. - This reflection increased my chagrin. -My vexation was evident .- - Narcissa infisted on going home immediately; and as I led her to the door, her noble admirer, with a look full of languishment,

706 The Adventures of

guishment, directed to her a profound bow, which stung me to the soul——Before she went into the chair, she asked, with an appearance of concern, what was the matter with me? and I could pronounce no more than, "By heaven! I'm distracted."

CHASCHES CHASCHES CHASCHES CH

CHAP. LVIII.

Tortured with jealousy, I go home and abuse Strap -receive a message from Narcissa, in consequence of which I basten to her apartment, where her endearing affurances banish all my doubts and apprebensions -- in my retreat discover somebody in the dark, whom, suspecting to be a fpy, I resolve to kill; but, to my great surprise, am convinced of his being no other than Strap -- Melinda slanders me -- I become acquainted with Lord Quiverwit, who endeavours to found me with regard to Narcissa-the Squire is introduced to bis Lordship, and grows cold towards me-I learn from my confidante, that this nobleman professes bonourable love to my mistress, who continues faithful to me, notwithstanding the scandalous reports she has beard to my prejudice——I am mortified with an assurance that ber whole fortune depends upon the pleasure of ber brother --- Mr. Freeman condoles me on the decline of my character, which I vindicate fo much to bis satisfaction, that he undertakes to combat fame in my behalf.

HAVING uttered this exclamation, at which the fighed, I went home in the condition of a frantic Bedlamite; and finding the fire in my apartment almost extinguished, vented my fury upon poor Strap, whose ear I pinched with such violence, that

that he roared hideously with pain, and when I quitted my hold looked fo foolially aghaft, that no unconcerned spectator could have seen him, without being seized with an immoderate fit of laughter. It is true, I was foon fensible of the injury I had done, and asked pardon for the outrage I had committed; upon which my faithful valet, shaking his head, said, "I forgive you, and may God forgive you." But he could not help shedding some tears at my unkindness.-I felt unspeakable remorfe for what I had done, cursed my own ingratitude, and considered his tears as a reproach that my foul, in her present disturbance, could not bear. - It fet all my passions into a ferment, I swore horrible oaths without meaning or application, I foamed at the mouth, kicked the chairs about the room, and played abundance of mad pranks that frightened my friend almost out of his fenses.—At length my transport subsided, I became melancholy, and wept infenfibly.

During this state of dejection, I was surprised with the appearance of Miss Williams, whom Strap, blubbering all the while, had conducted into the chamber, without giving me previous notice of her approach .- She was extremely affected with my condition, which she had learned from him, begged me to moderate my passion, suspend my conjectures, and follow her to Narcissa, who desired to see me forthwith.—That dear name operated upon me like a charm! I started up, and without opening my lips, was conducted into her apartment through the garden, which we entered by a private door .- I found the adorable creature in tears! I was melted at the fight——we continued filent for fome time——my heart was too full to fpeak-her fnowy bosom heaved with fond refentment; at last the fobbing cried, What have I done to disoblige you!" My heart was pierced with the tender question! I drew near with the utmost reverence of affection! I fell

upon

upon my knees before her, and kissing her hand, exclaimed, "O! thou art all goodness and perfection! I am undone by my want of merit! I am unworthy to possess thy charms, which heaven hath destined for the arms of some more favoured being."—She guessed the cause of my disquiet, upbraided me gently for my suspicion, and gave me such flattering assurances of her eternal fidelity, that all my doubts and fears forsook me, and peace and

satisfaction reigned within my breast.

At midnight I left the fair nymph to her repose, and being let out by Miss Williams, at the garden , gate by which I entered, began to explore my way homeward in the dark, when I heard at my back a noise like that of a baboon when he mows and chatters. I turned instantly, and perceiving fomething black, concluded I was discovered by some spy, employed to watch for that purpose: Aroused at this conjecture, by which the reputation of the virtuous Narcissa appeared in jeopardy, I drew my fword, and would have facrificed him to her fame, had not the voice of Strap restrained my arm: It was with great difficulty he could pronounce, "D-d-d-do! mum-um " -um-murder me if you please." Such an effect had the cold upon his jaws, that his teeth rattled like a pair of castanets. Pleased to be thus undeceived, I laughed at his confernation, and asked what brought him thither? Upon which he gave me to understand, that his concern for me had induced him. to follow me to that place, where the same reason had detained him till now; and he frankly owned, that in spite of the esteem he had for Miss Williams, he began to be very uneasy about me, considering the disposition in which I went abroad; and if I had staid much longer, would have certainly alarmed the neighbourhood in my behalf. The knowledge of this his intention confounded me! I represented to him the mischievous consequences that would have attended fuch fuch a rash action, and cautioning him severely against any such design for the future, concluded my admonition with an assurance, that in case he should ever act so madly, I would, without hesitation, put him to death. "Have a little patience, (cried he, in a lamentable tone) your displeasure will do the business, without your committing murder." I was touched with this reproach; and as soon as we got home, made it my business to appease him, by explaining the cause of that transport, during which I

had used him so unworthily.

Next day when I went into the long room, I obferved feveral whispers circulate all of a sudden; and did not doubt that Melinda had been busy with my character; but I confoled myself with the love of Narcissa, upon which I rested with the most persect confidence, and going up to the rowly-powly table, won a few pieces from my suspected rival, who with an easy politeness, entered into conversation with me, and defiring my company at the coffee-house, treated me with tea and chocolate. I remembered Strutwell, and guarded against his infinuating behaviour; nor was my fuspicion wrong placed; he artfully turned the discourse upon Narcissa, and endeavoured, by hinting at an intrigue he pretended to be engaged in elsewhere, to learn what connexion there was between her and me. But all his finesse was inessectual; I was convinced of his diffimulation, and gave such general answers to his inquiries, that he was forced to drop the subject, and talk of something else.

While we conversed in this manner, the favage came in, with another gentleman, who introduced him to his lordship; and he was received with such peculiar marks of distinction, that I was persuaded the courtier intended to use him in some shape or another; and from thence I drew an unlucky omen. But I had more cause to be dismayed the following day, when I saw the Squire in company

with

I

h

with Melinda and her mother, who honoured me with several disdainful glances; and when I afterwards threw myself in his way, instead of the cordial shake of the hand, he returned my salute with a cold repetition of "Servant, servant;" which he pronounced with such indifference, or rather contempt, that if he had not been Narcissa's brother, I should have affronted him in publick.

These occurrences disturbed me not a little. I foresaw the brooding storm, and armed myself with resolution for the occasion; but Narcissa being at stake, I was far from being resigned.—I could have renounced every other comfort of life with some degree of sortitude; but the prospect of losing her, disabled all my philosophy, and tortured my soul into

madness.

Miss Williams found me, next morning, full of anxious tumult, which did not abate, when she told me, that my Lord Quiverwit, having professed honourable intentions, had been introduced to my lovely mistress by her brother, who had at the same time, from the information of Melinda, spoke of me as an Irish fortune-hunter, without either birth or estate; who supported myself in the appearance of a gentleman by sharping, and other infamous practices; and who was of fuch an obscure origin, that I did not even know my own extraction. - Though I expected all this malice, I could not hear it with temper, especially as truth was so blended with salsehood in the affertion, that it would be almost impossible to separate the one from the other in my vindication.-But I faid nothing on this head, being impatient to know how Narcissa had been affected with the discovery .- That generous creature, far from believing these imputations, was no sooner withdrawn with her confidante, than she inveighed with great warmth against the malevolence of the world, to which only the ascribed the whole of what had been said to my

disadvantage; and calling every circumstance of my behaviour to her, into review before her, sound every thing so polite, honourable and disinterested, that she could not harbour the least doubt of my being the gentleman I assumed.——" I have indeed " (said she) purposely forbore to ask the particulars of his life, less the recapitulation of some missor- tunes, which he has undergone, should give him pain: And as to the article of his softune, I own myself equally assaid of enquiring into it, and of discovering the situation of my own, less we should sind ourselves both unhappy in the explanation; for alas! my provision is conditional, and depends entirely on my marrying with my brother's confent."

in

m

ir

b

ft

10

th

ta

ti

u

b

il

p

h

I was thunderstruck with this intelligence; the light forfook my eyes, the colour vanished from my cheeks, and I remained in a state of universal trepidation! My female friend perceiving my disorder, encouraged me with affurances of Narcissa's constancy, and the hope of some accident favourable to our love, and as a further confolation gave me to understand, that she had acquainted my mistress with the out-lines of my life; and that although the was no stranger to the present low state of my finances, her love and esteem were rather increased than diminished by the knowledge of my circumstances. I was greatly comforted by this affurance, which faved me a world of confusion and anxiety: For I must have imparted my fituation one day to Narcissa; and this task I could not have performed without shame and disorder.

As I did not doubt that, by this time, the scandalous aspersions of Melinda were diffused all over the town, I resolved to collect my whole strength of asfurance, to brow-beat the efforts of her malice, and to publish her adventure with the frenchisted barber, by way of reprisal.—In the mean time, having promised to be at the garden gate about midnight, Miss Williams

Williams took her leave, bidding me repose myself entirely on the affection of my dear Narcissa, which was as perfect as inviolable. - Before I went abroad I was visited by Freeman, who came on purpose to inform me of the infamous stories that were raised at my expence. I heard them with great temper, and in my turn disclosed every thing that had happened between Melinda and me; and among other circumstances entertained him with the story of the barber, letting him know what share his friend Banter had in that affair: He was convinced of the injury my reputation had fuffered, and no longer doubting the fountain from whence this deluge of flander had flowed upon me, undertook to undeceive the town in my behalf, and roll the stream back upon its source; but in the mean time cautioned me from appearing in publick while the prepoffession was so strong against me, lest I should meet with some affront that might have bad consequences.

CHAP. LIX.

I receive an extraordinary message at the door of the long room, which I however enter, and affront the Squire, who threatens to take the law of me-rebuke Melinda for ber malice -- she weeps with vexation-- Lord Quiverwit is severe upon me——I retort his sarcasm-am received with the utmost tender. ness by Narcissa, who desires to hear the story of my life——we vow eternal constancy to one another——I retire——am waked by messenger, who brings a challenge from Quiverwit, whom I meet, engage, and vanquisb.

Thanked him for his advice, which, however, my pride and refentment would not permit me to follow; for he no fooner left me, in order to do justice to my character among his friends and acquaintance, than I fallied out, and went directly to the long-room. -- I was met at the door by a fervant, who presented to me a billet without a subscription, importing that my presence was disagreeable to the company, and defiring I would take the hint without further disturbance, and bestow myself elsewhere for the future.- This peremptory message filled me with indignation.-I followed the fellow who delivered it, and feizing him by the collar, in presence of all the company, threatened to put him instantly to death, if he did not discover the scoundrel who had charged him with fuch an impudent commission,

fe

fe W

th th

hi

66

46

44

to

til he

CC

pe W

W

ed ac

ag

ca

T

no

co

fay

die

tal

of

my

ine

ch

do

rai

that I might punish him as he deferved .- The meffenger, affrighted at my menaces and furious looks, fell upon his knees, and told me, that the gentleman who ordered him to deliver the letter was no other than Narcissa's brother, who at that time stood at the other end of the room, talking to Melinda .-I went up to him immediately, and in the hearing of his inamorata, accosted him in these words: "Lookee, " Squire, was it not for one confideration that pro-" tects you from my refentment, I would cane you " where you stand, for having had the prefumption " to fend me this scurrilous intimation;" which I tore to pieces and threw in his face; at the same time darting an angry regard at his mistress, I told her, I was forry she had put it out of my power to compliment her upon her invention, but at the expence of her good-nature and veracity -Her admirer, whose courage never rose but in proportion to the wine he had swallowed, instead of resenting my address in what is called an honourable way, threatened to profecute me for an affault, and took witneffes accordingly; while she, piqued at his pusillanimous behaviour, and enraged at the farcasm I had uttered against her, endeavoured to make her quarrel a public cause, and wept aloud with spite and vexation. The tears of a lady could not fail of attracting the notice and concern of the spectators, to whom the complained of my rudeness, with great bitterness, faying, if the was a man I durst not use her so .-The greatest part of the gentlemen, already prejudiced against me, were offended at the liberty I had taken, as appeared from their looks; though none of them fignified their difgust any other way, except my Lord Quiverwir, who ventured to fay with a ineer, that I was in the right to establish my own character, of which he had now no longer any doubt. - Nettled at this fevere equivoque, which raised a laugh at my expence, I replied with some warmth.

warmth, " I am proud of having in that particular 66 got the start of your lordship."-He made no anfwer to my repartee, but with a contemptuous smile, walked off, leaving me in a very difagreeable fituation.-In vain did I make up to several people of my acquaintance, whose conversation, I hoped, would banish my confusion; every body shunned me like a person insected, and I should not have been able to bear my disgrace, had not the idea of the ever-faithful and fond Narcissa come to my relief .- I quitted the scene of my mortification, and fauntering about the town, happened to wake from my contemplation, when I found myself just opposite to a toy-shop, which I entered, and purchased a ring set with a ruby in the form of a heart, furrounded by diamond sparks, for which I paid ten guineas, intending it

for a prefent to the charmer of my foul.

I was introduced, at the hour appointed, to this divine creature, who, notwithstanding what she had heard to my disadvantage, received me with the utmost confidence and tenderness; and having been informed of the general sketches of my life, by Miss Williams, expressed a desire of knowing the particular circumstances, which I related with great candour, omitting however fome things which I concluded altogether improper for her ear, and which the reader's reflection will eafily fuggest-As my story was little else than a recital of misfortunes, the tear of fympathy ceafed not to trickle down her enchanting eyes, during the whole of the narration, which when I had finished, she recompensed me for my trouble with the most endearing protestations of eternal love .- She bewailed her restricted condition, as it was the means of retarding my happiness; told me, that Lord Quiverwit, by her brother's permission, had been to drink tea with her that very afternoon, and actually proposed marriage; and feeing me extremely affected with this piece of information, mation, offered to give me a convincing proof of her affection, by espousing me in private, and leaving the rest to fate. - I was penetrated with this instance of her regard, but that I might not be outdone in generofity, refifted the bewitching temptation, in confideration of her honour and interest; at the same time, I presented my ring as a pledge of my inviolable attachment, and on my knees, implored heaven to shower its curses on my head, if ever my heart should entertain one thought unworthy of the passion I then avowed.—She received my token, gave me in return her picture in miniature, exquisitely drawn and set in gold; and in the same posture called heaven to witness and to judge her flame. - Our vows being thus reciprocally breathed, a confidence of hope enfued, and our mutual fondness becoming as intimate as innocence would allow, I grew infenfible of the progress of time, and it was morning before I could tear myself from this darling of my foul !-My good angel forefaw what would happen, and permitted me to indulge myself on this occasion, in consideration of the fatal absence I was doomed to suffer.

I went to bed immediately on my return to my lodging, and having slept about two hours, was waked by Strap, who, in great confusion, told me, there was a footman below with a letter, which he would deliver to no body but myself.—Alarmed at this piece of news, I desired my friend to shew him up to my chamber, and received the following letter, which, he said, required an immediate answer.

[&]quot;SIR,
"WHEN any man injures my honour, let
the difference of rank between us be ever
fo great, I am contented to wave the privilege of
my quality, and to feek reparation from him on
equal terms.—The infolence of your reply to me
Vol. II.

"yesterday

"yesterday in the long-room, I might have overlooked, had not your presumptive emulation in a
"much more interesting affair, and a discovery which
I made this morning, concurred in persuading me
to chastise your audacity with my sword.——If
you therefore have spirit enough to support the
character you assume, you will not fail to sollow
the bearer immediately to a convenient place, where
you shall be met by

" Quiverwit."

Whether I was enervated by the love and favour of Narcissa, or awed by the superior station of my antagonift, I know not, but I never had less inclination to fight, than at this time: However, finding there was a necessity for vindicating the reputation of my mistress, as well as for afferting my own honour, I forthwith rofe, and dreffing in a hurry, put on my fword, bade Strap attend me, and fet out with my conductor, curfing my bad fortune all the way, for having been observed in my return from my angel; for fo I interpreted his lordship's discovery. - When I came within fight of my rival, his lacquey told me, he had orders to ftop; upon which, I commanded Strap to halt also, while I walked forward; resolving, if possible, to come to an explanation with my challenger, before we should come to battle. --- Nor was an opportunity wanting; for I no fooner approached, than he asked with a stern countenance, What business I had in Mr. Topehall's garden, so early in the morning?-" I don't know, my Lord, (faid I) how " to answer a question put to me with such magiste-" rial haughtiness. — If your lordship will please to es expostulate calmly, you will have no cause to rees pent of your condescension .- Otherwise, I am not to be intimidated into any confession."—"There is " no room for denial (antwered he) I faw you come " out, with my own eyes." - " Did any other per-" fon fee me?" (faid I)-" I neither know nor " care (faid he) I want no other evidence than that of " my own fenses." - Pleased to hear that the suspicion was confined to him alone, I endeavoured to appeale his jealoufy, by owning an intrigue with the waitingmaid; but he had too much discernment to be so eafily imposed upon, and told me there was only one way to convince him of the truth of what I alleged: which was no other than renouncing all claim to Narciffa, upon oath, and promifing upon honour, never to speak to her for the future. - Exasperated at this proposal, I unsheathed my sword, saying, "Heavens! what title have you, or any man on " earth, to impose such terms on me!" He did the fame, and making towards me with a contracted brow, faid, I was a villain, and had dishonoured Narcissa.- "He's a scandalous villain (I replied, in " a transport of fury) who brands me with that " imputation! She is a thousand times more chaste " than the mother that bore you; and I will affert " her honour with my heart's blood!"-So faying, I rushed upon him with more eagerness than addrefs, and endeavouring to get within his point, received a wound in my neck, which redoubled my rage. He excelled me in temper as well as in skill, by which means he parried my thrusts with great calmness, until I had almost exhausted my spirits; and when he perceived me beginning to flag, attacked me fiercely in his turn. - Finding himself however better opposed than he expected, he refolved to follow his longe, and close with me; accordingly, his fword entered my waistcoat, on the fide of the breaft-bone, and running up between my shirt and skin, appeared over my lest shoulder: I imagined that his weapon had perforated my lungs, and of confequence that the wound was mortal; therefore determined not to die unrevenged, I feized L 2 his his shell, which was close to my breast, before he could disentangle his point, and keeping it fast with my left hand, shortened my own sword with my right, intending to run him through the heart; but he received the thrust in the left arm, which penetrated up to the shoulder-blade.—Disappointed in this expectation, and afraid still that death would frustrate my revenge, I grappled with him, and being much the stronger, threw him upon the ground, where I wrested his sword out of his hand, and so great was my confusion, instead of turning the point upon him, struck out three of his fore-teeth with the hilt. -In the mean time, our fervants feeing us fall, ran up to separate and affist us; but before their approach, I was upon my feet, and had discovered, that my supposed mortal wound was only a slight scratch. The knowledge of my own fafety difarmed me of a good deal of my refentment, and I began to inquire with some concern into the situation of my antagonift, who remained on the ground bleeding plentifully at his mouth and arm.—I helped his footman to raise him, and having bound up his wound with my handkerchief, affured him it was not dangerous; I likewise restored his sword, and offered to support him to his house.—He thanked me, with an air of fullen dignity; and whifpering, that I should hear from him foon, went away, leaning on his fervant's shoulder.

I was furprised at this promise, which I construed into a threat, and resolved, if ever he should call me out again, to use whatever advantage fortune might give me over him, in another manner.—In the mean time, I had leisure to take notice of Strap, who seemed quite stupished with horror: I comforted him with an assurance that I had received no damage, and explained the nature of this affair, as we walked homeward—By that time I had got into my apartment, I found the wound in my neck stiff and uneasy,

eafy, and a good deal of clotted blood run down upon my shirt: Upon which, I pulled off my coat and waiftcoat, and unbuttoned my collar, that I might dress it with more ease. - My friend no sooner perceived my shirt quite dyed with blood, than imagining I had got at least twenty thousand wounds, he cried, " O Jesus!" and fell flat on the floor .- I stopt the bleeding with a little dry lint, and applying a plaster over it, cleansed myself from the gore, shifted and dreffed, while he lay fenfeless at my feet; so that when he recovered, and faw me perfectly well, he could scarce believe his own eyes. - Now that the danger was past, I was very well pleased with what had happened, hoping that it would foon become known, and confequently dignify my character not a little in this place. — I was also proud of having shewn myself, in some shape, worthy the love of Narcissa, who, I was persuaded, would not think the worse of me for what I had done.

CHAP. LX.

I am visited by Freeman, with whom I appear in public, and am carefied — am sent for by Lord Quiverwit, whose presence I quit in a passion—Narcissa is carried off by her brother—I intend to pursue him, and am dissuaded by my friend—engage in play, and lose all my money—set out for London—try my fortune at the gaming table, without success—receive a letter from Narcissa—bilk my taylor.

WHILE I entertained myself with these reflections, the news of the duel being communicated by fome unknown channel, spread all over the town .- I was vifited by Freeman, who teftified his furprise at finding me; for, he was told, that Lord Quiverwit being dead of his wounds, I had absconded, in order to avoid the cognizance of the law. I asked if people guessed the occasion of the quarrel; and understanding it was attributed to his lordship's resentment of my reply in the longroom, confirmed that conjecture, glad to find Narcissa unsuspected. My friend, after I had affured him that my antagonist was in no danger, wished me joy of the event, than which, he faid, nothing could happen more opportunely to support the idea he had given of my character, to his friends, among whom he had been very affiduous in my behalf.

On the strength of this assurance, I went with him to the coffee-house, where I was saluted by a great many of those very persons, who had shunned me

the preceding day; and I found every body making merry with the story of Melinda's French gallant.—While I remained in this place, I received a message from Lord Quiverwit, desiring, if I was not engaged,

to see me at his house.

Thither I immediately repaired, and was conducted to an apartment where I was received by his lordship in bed.—When we were left by ourselves, he thanked me in very polite terms, for having used the advantige fortune had given me over him with fuch moderation; and asked pardon for any offence his resentment might have prompted him to commit. - " I " would willingly (faid he) make you my friend; " but as it is impossible for me to divest myself of " my passion for Narcissa, I am too well convinced " of your fentiments, to think we shall ever agree " on that subject. I took the liberty, therefore, of " fending for you, in order to own candidly, that I " cannot help opposing your success with that young " lady; though, at the fame time, I promise to re-" gulate my opposition by the dictates of justice and "honour: This, however, I think proper to advertise you of, that she has no independent fortune, " and if you should even succeed in your addresses, " you would have the mortification to fee her re-" duced to indigence, unless you have wherewithal " to support her --- And I am credibly informed of " your incapacity that way -- Nay, I will confess, " that urged by this confideration, I have actually " fent notice to her brother, of the progress I suspect " you have made in her affection, and defired him "to take his precautions accordingly." ---- Alarmed and provoked at this information, I told his lordship. that I did not fee how he could reconcile that piece of conduct with his profession of open dealing, and flung away from him in a paffion.

As I walked homeward, in hope of hearing from my misties as usual by means of Miss Williams, I

was furprifed with the waving of a handkerchief. from the window of a coach and fix that passed by me at full speed; and upon further observation, I saw a fervant on horse-back riding after it, who, I knew by his livery, belonged to the Squire,-Thunderfiruck with this discovery, the knowledge of my misfortune rushed all at once upon my reflection! - I gueffed immediately that the fignal was made by the dear hand of Narcissa, who being hurried away in consequence of Lord Quiverwit's message to her brother, had no other method of relating her diffres, and imploring my affiftance. - Frantick with this conjecture, I ran to my lodgings, fnatched my piftols, and ordered Strap to get post-horses, with such incoberence of speech and disorder, that the poor valet, terrified with the suspicion of another duel, instead of providing what I defired, went forthwith to Freeman, who being informed of my behaviour, came fireight to my apartment, and conjured me so pathetically to make him acquainted with the cause of my uneafiness, that I could not refuse telling him my happiness was fled with Narcissa, and that I must retrieve her or perish. He represented the madness of fuch an undertaking, and endeavoured to divert me from it with great strength of friendship and reafon: But all his arguments would have been ineffectual, had he not put me in mind of the dependence I ought to have on the love of Narcissa, and the attachment of her maid, who could not fail of finding opportunities to advertise me of their situation: and at the same time demonstrated the injury my charmer's reputation must suffer from my precipitate retreat. I was convinced and composed by these considerations: I appeared in public with an air of tranquillity, was well received by the best company in town, and my misfortune taking air, condoled accordingly; while I had the satisfaction of seeing Melinda so univerfally discountenanced, that she was fain to return to

amounted.

to London, in order to avoid the scoffs and censure of the ladies at Bath.—But though the hope of hearing from the darling of my soul supported my spirits a little while, I began to be very uneasy, when at the end of several weeks I found that expectation disappointed.—In short, melancholy and despondence took possession of my soul; and repining at that providence, which, by acting the stepmother towards me, kept me from the fruition of my wishes, I determined, in a sit of despair, to risk all I had at the gaming table, with a view of acquiring a fortune sufficient to render me independent for life; or of plunging myself into such a state of misery, as would effectually crush every ambitious hope that now tortured my imagination.

Actuated by this fatal resolution, I engaged in play, and after some turns of fortune, found myself, at the end of three days, worth a thousand pounds; but it was not my intention to stop there, for which cause I kept Strap ignorant of my success, and continued my career, until I was reduced to five guineas, which I would have hazarded also, had I not been ashamed to fall from a bet of two hundred pounds to

fuch a petty fum.

Having thus executed my scheme, I went home, amazed to find myself so much at ease, and informed my friend Strap of my mischance, with such calmness, that he imagining I joked, affected to receive the tidings with great equanimity.—But both he and I found ourselves mistaken very soon.—I had misinterpreted my own stupidity into deliberate resignation, and he had reason to believe me in earnest, when he saw me next morning agitated with the most violent despair, which he endeavoured to alleviate with all the consolation in his power.

In one of my lucid intervals, however, I charged him to take a place in the stage-coach for London; and in the mean time paid my debts in Bath, which

amounted to thirty shillings only.—Without taking leave of my friends I embarked, Strap having the good fortune to find a return-horse, and arrived in town, without having met with any thing remarkable on the road. While we crossed Bagshot-heath, I was seized with a fort of inclination to retrieve my fortune, by laying passengers under contribution, in some such place.—My thoughts were so circumstanced at this time, that I should have digested the crime of robbery, so righteously had I concerted my plan, and ventured my life in the execution, had I not been deterred by resecting upon the infamy that attends detection.

The apartment I formerly lived in being unengaged, I took possession of it, and next day went in quest of Banter, who received me with open arms, in expectation of having his bond discharged to his liking: But when he understood what had happened, his countenance changed of a sudden, and he told me with a dryness of displeasure peculiar to himself, that if he was in my place, he would put it out of fortune's power to play him fuch another trick, and be avenged of his own indifcretion at once.-When I defired him to explain his meaning, he pointed to his neck, raifed himself on his tip-toes, and was going away without any further ceremony, when I put him in mind of my indigence, and demanded the five guineas I had formerly lent him. " Five guineas! (cried he) Zounds! had you acted with common or prudence you might have had twenty thousand in " your pocket by this time. - I depended upon five " hundred from you, as much as if I had had notes of for it in the bank; and by all the rules of equity, you are indebted to me for that fum."--- I was neither pleased nor convinced by this computation, and infifted on my right with fuch determined obstinacy, that he was fain to alter his tone, and appeale my clamour, by affuring me, that he was not mafter of five

five shillings. — Society in distress generally promotes good understanding among people; from being a dun, I descended to be a client, and asked his advice about repairing my losses.—He counselled me to have recourse again to the gaming-table, where I succeeded so well before, and put myself in a condition, by selling my watch.—I followed his directions, and having accommodated him with a few pieces,

went to the place, where I loft every shilling.

Then I returned to my lodgings full of desperate resolution, and having made Strap acquainted with my fate, ordered him to pawn my fword immediately, that I might be enabled to make another effort .-This affectionate creature no fooner understood my purpose, than seized with insuppressible forrow at the prospect of my misery, he burst into tears, and asked what I proposed to do after the small sum he could raise on the sword should be spent? " On my " own account (faid he) I am quite unconcerned; " for while God spares me health and these ten " fingers, I can earn a comfortable subfistence any " where; but what must become of you, who have " less humility to stoop, and more appetites to gra-"tify?"—Here I interrupted him, by faying, with a gloomy aspect, I should never want a resource while I had a loaded pistol in possession. Stupisied with horror at this dreadful intinuation, he flood mute for fome time, and then broke out into "God of his " infinite mercy enable you to withfrand that temp-" tation of the devil! --- Confider your immortal " foul - there is no repentance in the grave !-- O " Lord! that ever we should come to this-Are we " not enjoined to refign ourselves to the will of heawen ?---where is your patience ?--- Durum patientia " be many good things in store for you -- accidit in " puncto quid non speratur in anno-remember your " uncle, Mr. Bowling; perhaps he is now on his " voyage voyage homeward, pleafing himself with the hopes of seeing and relieving you---nay, peradventure he is already arrived, for the ship was expected about this time."—---A ray of hope shot athwart my soul at this suggestion; I thanked my friend for his seasonable recollection, and after having promised to take no resolution till his return, dismissed him to

Wapping for intelligence.

In his absence I was visited by Banter, who being informed of my bad luck at play, told me, that fortune would probably be one day weary of persecuting me. "In the mean time, (said he) here is a letter for you, which I received just now enclosed in one from Freeman."——I snatched it with eagerness, and knowing the superscription to be of Narcissa's hand-writing, kissed it with transport, and having opened it, read,

IT is with great difficulty, that I have stolen from the observation of those spies who are set over me, this opportunity of telling you, that I was suddenly carried away from Bath, by my brother, who was informed of our correspondence by Lord Quiverwit, whom, I fince understand, you have wounded in a duel on my account.———As I am fully convinced of your honour and love, I hope I shall never hear of such desperate proofs of either for the suture.——I am so strictly watched, that it will be impossible for you to see me, until my brother's suspicion shall abate, or heaven contrive some other unforeseen event in our behalf. In the mean time, you may depend on the containcy and affection of

se Your own

" NARCISSA.

7

"P.S. Miss Williams, who is my fellow prisoner, desires to be remembered to you. We are both in good health, and only in pain for you, especially, as it will be impracticable for you to convey any message or letter to the place of our confinement; for which reason, pray desist from the attempt, that, by miscarrying, might prolong our captivity.

" N---."

This kind letter afforded me great consolation: I communicated it to Banter, and at the same time, shewed him her picture: He approved of her beauty and good sense, and could not help owning, that my neglect of Miss Snapper was excusable, when such a

fine creature engrofled my attention.

I began to be reconciled to my fate, and imagined, that if I could contrive means of subfifting until my uncle should arrive, in case he was not already at home, he would enable me to do fomething effectual in behalf of my love and fortune-I therefore confulted Banter about a present supply, who no sooner understood that I had credit with a taylor, than he advised me to take off two or three suits of rich clothes, and convert them into cash, by felling them at half price to a falesman in Monmouth-street.-I was startled at this proposal, which I thought savoured a little of fraud; but he rendered it palatable, by observing, that in a few months I might be in a condition to do every body justice; and in the mean time, I was acquitted by the honesty of my intention-I fuffered myself to be persuaded by his salvo, by which my necessity, rather than my judgment, was convinced; and when I found there were noaccounts of the ship in which my uncle embarked, actually put the scheme in practice, and raised by It. it, five and twenty guineas, paying him for his advice for the odd five.

THE THE THE THE THE THE THE THE THE

CHAP. LXI.

I am arrested—carried to the Marshalsea—find my old acquaintance beau Jackson in that jail—be informs me of his adventures—Strap arrives, and with difficulty is comforted—Jackson introduces me to a poet—I admire his conversation and capacity—am deeply affected with my misfortune—Strap hires himself as a journeyman barber.

BUT this expedient was in a few weeks attended with a consequence I did not foresee; a player having purchased one of the suits which were exposed to fale, appeared in it on the stage one night, while my taylor unfortunately happened to be prefent --- He knew it immediately, and inquiring minutely into the affair discovered my whole contrivance; upon which, he came to my lodgings, and telling me that he was very much straitened for want of money, prefented his bill, which amounted to 501. Surprised at this unexpected address, I affected to treat him cavalierly, fwore some oaths, asked if he doubted my honour, and, telling him I should take care who I dealt with for the future, bade him come again in three days .- He obeyed me punctually, demanded his money, and finding himfelf amused with bare promises, arrested me that very day in the street .- I was not much shocked at this adventure, which, indeed, put an end to a flate of horrible expectation; but I refused to go to a spunging-house, where

where I heard there was nothing but the most stagrant imposition; and a coach being called, was carried to the Marshalsea, attended by a bailist and his follower, who were very much disappointed and

chagrined at my refolution.

The turnkey gueffing, from my appearance, that I had money in my pocket, received me with the repetition of the Latin word depone, and gave me to understand, that I must pay before-hand for the apartment I should choose to dwell in. - I defired to see his conveniencies, and hired a fmall paultry bedchamber for a crown a week, which, in any other place, would not have let for half the money. -Having taken possession of this dismal habitation, I fent for Strap, and my thoughts were busied in collecting matter of confolation to that faithful fquire, when fomebody knocked at my door, which I no fooner opened, than a young fellow entered, in very shabby clothes, and marvellous foul linen. After a low bow, he called me by name, and asked if I had forgot him. His voice affifted me in recollecting his person, whom I soon recognized to be my old acquaintance Jackson, of whom mention is made in the first part of my memoirs. - I faluted him cordially, expressed my satisfaction at finding him alive, and condoled him on his present situation, which, however, did not feem to affect him much, for he laughed very heartily at the occasion of our meeting so unexpectedly in this place. Our mutual compliments being past, I inquired about his amour with the lady of fortune, which feemed to be fo near a happy conclusion when I had the pleasure of seeing him last; and after an immoderate fit of laughter, he gave me to understand, that he had been egregiously bit in that affair. -- "You must know (said he) that a few " days after our adventure with the bawd and her " b-ches, I found means to be married to that same " fine lady you speak of, and passed the night with " her at her lodgings, so much to her satisfaction. 66 that early in the morning, after a good deal of " fniveling and fobbing, the owned, that far from 66 being an heiress of great fortune, the was no other than a common woman of the town, who had de-" coyed me into matrimony, in order to enjoy the or privilege of a femme converte; and that unless "I made my escape immediately, I should be arrested for a debt of her contracting, by bailiffs emof ployed and instructed for that purpose. Startled 46 at this intimation, I rose in a twinkling, and " taking leave of my spouse with several hearty " damns, got fafe into the verge of the court, where " I kept fnug until I was appointed furgeon's mate of a man of war at Portsmouth; for which place " I set out on Sunday, went on board of my ship, in which I failed to the Straits, where I had the so good fortune to be made furgeon of a floop that came home a few months after, and was put out " of commission; whereupon I came to London, " imagining myfelf forgotten, and freed from my wife and her creditors; but had not been in town " a week before I was arrested for a debt of her's, " amounting to 20 % and brought to this place, where I have been fixed by another action fince " that time.--However, you know my disposition; "I defy care and anxiety; and being on the half-44 pay lift, make shift to live here tolerably easy."--I congratulated him on his philosophy, and remembring that I was in his debt, repaid the money he formerly lent me, which, I believe, was far from being unseasonable. I then inquired about the œconomy of the place, which he explained to my fatisfaction; and after we had agreed to mess together, he was just going to give orders for dinner, when Strap arrived.

I never in my life faw forrow fo extravagantly expressed in any countenance, as in that of my honest

friend,

fi

friend, which was, indeed, particularly adapted by nature for fuch impressions .- When we were left by ourselves, I communicated to him my disaster, and endeavoured to confole him with the same arguments he had formerly used to me, withal representing the fair chance I had of being relieved in a short time by Mr. Bowling. - But his grief was unutterable; he feemed to give attention without liftening, and wrung his hands in filence; fo that I was in a fair way of being infected by his behaviour, when Jackson returned, and perceiving the deference I paid to Strap, although in a footman's habit, distributed his crumbs of comfort with fuch mirth, jollity, and unconcern, that the features of the distressed squire relaxed by degrees, he recovered the use of speech, and began to be a little more reconciled to this lamentable event. We dined together on boiled beef and greens, brought from a cook's shop in the neighbourhood; and although this meal was ferved up in a manner little corresponding with the sphere of life in which I had lately lived, I made a virtue of necessity, ate with good appetite, and treated my friends with a bottle of wine, which had the defired effect, of increasing the good humour of my fellow-prisoner, and exhilerating the spirits of Strap, who now talked cavalierly of my misfortune.

After dinner, Jackson lest us to our private affairs; when I desired my stiend to pack up all our things, and carry them to some cheap lodging he should choose for himself in the neighbourhood of the Marsshalsea, after he had discharged my lodging, for which purpose I gave him money.—I likewise recommended to him the keeping my missortune secret, and saying to my landlord, or any other who should inquire for me, that I was gone into the country for a few weeks; at the same time I laid strong injunctions upon him to call every second day upon Banter, in case he should receive any letter for me from Narcissa, by the

canal

CO

w

m

ci

10

e

canal of Freeman; and by all means to leave a direction for himself, at my uncle's lodgings in Wapping, by which I might be found when my kinsman should arrive.

When he departed to execute these orders, (which, by the bye, were punctually performed that very night) I found myfelf fo little feasoned to my fituation, that I dreaded reflection, and fought shelter from it in the company of the beau, who, promifing to regale me with a lecture upon taffe, conducted me to the common fide, where I faw a number of naked miserable wretches assembled together. --- We had not been here many minutes, when a figure appeared, wrapt in a dirty rug, tied about his loins with two pieces of lift, of different colours, knotted together; having a black bushy beard, and his head covered with a huge mass of brown periwig, which feemed to have been ravished from the crown of some scare-crow.—This apparition, stalking in with great folemnity, made a profound bow to the audience, who fignified their approbation by a general response of "How d'ye do, doctor?" He then turned towards us, and honoured Jackson with a particular falutation: upon which my friend, in a formal manner, introduced him to me, by the name of Mr. Melopoyn——This ceremony being over, he advanced into the middle of the congregation, which crowded around him, and hemming three times, to my utter aftonishment, pronounced with great fignificance of voice and gesture, a very elegant and ingenious discourse upon the difference between genius and tafte, illustrating his affertions with apt quotations from the best authors, ancient as well as modern. When he had finished his harangue, which lasted a full hour, he bowed again to the spectators; not one of whom (I was informed) understood so much as a sentence of what he had uttered. They manifested, however, their admiration and esteem by voluntary contri-

contribution, which, Jackfon told me, one week with another, amounted to eighteen pence. This moderate stipend, together with some small presents that he received for making up differences, and deciding causes amongst the prisoners, just enabled him to breath and walk about, in the grotefque figure I have described -I understood also, that he was an excellent poet, and had composed a tragedy, which was allowed by every body who had feen it, to be a performance of great merit; that his learning was infinite, his morals unexceptionable, and his modefly invincible.—Such a character could not fail of attracting my regard; I longed impatiently to be acquainted with him, and defired Jackson would engage him to fpend the evening in my apartment. My request was granted, he favoured us with his company, and in the course of our conversation, perceiving that I had a strong passion for the Belles Lettres, acquitted himfelf so well on that subject, that I expressed a fervent defire of feeing his productions. - In this point too he gratified my inclination :- he promifed to bring his tragedy to my room next day, and in the mean time, entertained me with some detached pieces, which gave me a very advantageous idea of his poetical talent.—Among other things I was particularly pleafed with some elegies, in imitation of Tibullus; one of which I beg leave to fubmit to the reader, as a specimen of his complexion and capacity.

I.

Here now are all my flatt'ring dreams of joy?

Monimia, give my foul her wonted rest;

Since first thy beauty fix'd my roving eye,

Heart gnawing cares corrode my pensive breast!

II.

Let happy lovers fly where pleasures call, With festive songs beguile the fleeting hour; Lead beauty thro' the mazes of the ball, Or press her wanton in love's roseate bower.

III.

For me, no more I'll range th' empurpled mead, Where shepherds pipe, and virgins dance around, Nor wander thro' the woodbine's fragrant shade, To hear the music of the grove resound.

IV.

I'll feek some lonely church, or dreary hall,
Where fancy paints the glimm'ring taper blue,
Where damps hang mould'ring on the ivy'd wall,
And sheeted ghosts drink up the midnight dew:

V.

There leagu'd with hopeless anguish and despair, A-while in silence o'er my fate repine: Then, with a long farewel to love and care, To kindred dust my weary limbs consign.

VI.

Wilt thou, Monimia, shed a gracious tear, On the cold grave where all my sorrows rest? Strew vernal flow'rs, applaud my love sincere, And bid the turf lie easy on my breast!

I was

pla

dif

an

fio

Wa

pa

vil fle

fo

of

in

w sp

III og

C

P

2

b

1

I was wonderfully affected with this pathetic complaint, which feemed fo well calculated for my own disappointment in love, that I could not help attaching the idea of Narcissa to the name of Monimia, and of forming fuch melancholy prefages of my paffion, that I could not recover my tranquillity; and was fain to have recourse to the bottle, which prepared me for a profound fleep that I could not otherwife have enjoyed.—Whether these impressions invited and introduced a train of other melancholy reflections, or my fortitude was all exhausted in the effort I made against despondence, during the first day of my imprisonment, I cannot determine; but I awoke in the horrors, and found my imagination haunted with such dismal apparitions, that I was ready to despair: --- and I believe the reader will own, I had no great cause to congratulate myself, when I considered my fituation.—I was interrupted in the midst of these gloomy apprehensions, by the arrival of Strap, who contributed not a little to the re-establishment of my peace, by letting me know that he had hired himself as a journeyman barber; by which means he would be able not only to fave me a confiderable expence. but even make shift to lay up something for my subfiftence after my money should be spent, in case I should not be relieved before.

ZEZZERZERZERZERZEZZEZ

CHAP. LXII.

1 read Melopoyn's tragedy, and conceive a vast opinion of his genius—-he recounts his adventures.

W HILE we ate our breakfast together, I made him acquainted with the character and condition of the poet, who came in with his play at that

that instant, and imagining we were engaged about business, could not be prevailed upon to sit; but leaving his performance, went away.—My friend's tender heart was melted at the sight of a gentleman and christian (for he had a great veneration for both these epithets) in such misery; and assented with great chearfulness to a proposal I made of clothing him with our superfluities; a task with which he charged himself, and departed immediately to perform it.

He was no fooner gone, than I locked my door, and fat down to the tragedy, which I read to the end with vast pleasure, not a little amazed at the conduct of the managers who had rejected it. - The fable, in my opinion, was well chosen, and naturally conducted, the incidents interesting, the characters beautifully contrasted, strongly marked and well supported; the diction poetical, spirited, and correct; the unities of the drama maintained with the most scrupulous exactness: the opening gradual and engaging, the peripeteinia surprising, and the catastrophe affeeting: In short, I judged it by the laws of Aristotle and Horace, and could find nothing in it exceptionable, but a little too much embellishment in some few places, which objection he removed to my fatisfaction, by a quotation from Aristotle's Poetics, importing, that the least interesting parts of a poem ought to be raifed and dignified by the charms and energy of diction.

a decent

hi

pl

tl

t

h

il

d

tl

I

n

t

t

h

h

6

a decent dress, which altered his figure very much to his advantage .-- I perceived by his countenance, that his heart was big with gratitude, and endeavoured to prevent his acknowledgments, by asking pardon for the liberty I had taken; he made no reply, but with an aspect full of admiration and esteem, bowed to the ground, while the tears gushed from his eyes. Affected with these symptoms of an ingenuous mind, I shifted the conversation, and complimented him on his performance, which I affured him, afforded me infinite pleafure .--- My approbation made him happy; dinner being ferved, and Jackson arrived, I begged their permission for Strap to sit at table with us, after having informed them, that he was a person to whom I was extremely obliged; they were kind enough to grant that favour, and we ate together with great harmony and fatisfaction.

Our meal being ended, I expressed my wonder at the little regard Mr. Melopoyn had met with from the world; and signified a desire of hearing how he had been treated by the managers of the play-houses, to whom I understood from Jackson, he had offered his tragedy without success.—" There is so little metertaining in the incidents of my life (said he) that I am sure the recital will not recompense your attention; but since you discover an inclination to know them, I understand my duty too well to dis-

" appoint your defire."

Y father, who was a curate in the country, being by the narrowness of his circumstances, hindered from maintaining me at the university, took the charge of my education upon himself, and laboured with such industry and concern in the undertaking, that I had little cause to regret the want of publick masters --- Being at great pains to consult my natural bias, he discovered in me, betimes, an inclination for poetry; upon which he recommended me to an intimate

intimate acquaintance with the classicks, in the cultivation of which, he affished me with paternal zeal, and uncommon erudition.—When he thought me sufficiently acquainted with the ancients, he directed my studies to the best modern authors, French and Italian, as well as English, and laid a particular injunction upon me, to make myself master of my mo-

ther tongue.

About the age of eighteen I grew ambitious of undertaking a work of some consequence; and, with my father's approbation, actually planned the tragedy you have read; but before I had finished four acts. that indulgent parent died, and left my mother and me in very indigent circumstances. - A near relation compassionating our distress, took us into his family, where I brought my fable to a conclusion; and soon after that period my mother quitted this life .-- When my forrow for this melancholy event had subsided, I told my kinsman, who was a farmer, that having paid my last duty to my parent, I had now no attachment to detain me in the country, and therefore was refolved to fet out for London, and offer my play to the stage, where I did not doubt of acquiring a large share of fame as well as fortune; in which cafe I should not be unmindful of my friends and benefactors. --- My cousin was ravished with the prospect of my felicity, and willingly contributed towards the expence of fitting me out for my expedition.

Accordingly I took a place in the waggon, and arrived in town, where I hired an apartment in a garret, willing to live as frugal as possible, until I should know what I had to expect from the manager, to whom I intended to offer my play.——For though I looked upon myself as perfectly secure of a good reception, imagining that a patentee would be as eager to receive, as I to present my production; I did not know whether or not he might be pre-engaged in favour of another author, a circumstance that would certainly

certainly retard my success. - On this consideration too, I determined to be speedy in my application, and even to wait upon one of the managers, the very next day. For this purpose, I inquired of my landlord, if he knew where either or both of them lived; and he being curious to know my bufiness, and at the fame time, appearing to be a very honest friendly man (a tallow-chandler) I made him acquainted with my defign; upon which he told me, that I went the wrong way to work; that I would not find fuch easy access to a manager as I imagined; and that if I delivered my performance without proper recommendation, it would be as one to a thousand if ever it should be minded. Take my advice (faid he) " and your business is done. - One of the patentees " is a good catholic, as I am, and uses the same fa-"ther who confesses me.- I will make you ac-" quainted with this good priest, who is an excellent " scholar, and if he should approve of your play, his " recommendation will go a great way in determin-" ing Mr. Supple to bring it on the stage."—I applauded his expedient, and was introduced to the friar, who having perused the tragedy, was pleased to fignify his approbation, and commended me, in particular, for having avoided all reflections upon religion. --- He promised to use all his influence with his son Supple in my behalf, and to inform himself that very day, at what time it would be proper for me to wait upon him with the piece.—He was punctual in performing his engagement, and next morning gave me to understand that he had mentioned my affair to the manager, and that I had no more to do, than to go to his house any time in the forenoon, and make use of his name, upon which I should find immediate admittance.—I took this advice, put my performance in my bosom, and having received directions, went immediately to the house of Mr. Supple, and knocked at the door, which had a wicket in the middle, faced VOL. II. M with

d

n

n

1

I

d

-

e

e

y

1

d

-1

I

r,

h

2-

er

ot

a-

ld

ly

with a net-work of iron. Through this a fervant having viewed me for some time, demanded to know my business .-- I told him, my business was with Mr. Supple, and that I came from Mr. O Varnish. -- He examined my appearance once more, then went away, returned in a few minutes, and faid his master was busy and could not be feen .- Although I was a little mortified at my disappointment, I was persuaded that my reception was owing to Mr. Supple's ignorance of my errand; and that I might meet with no more obstructions of the same kind, I defired Mr. O Varnish to be my introductor the next time. -He complied with my request, and obtained immediate admittance to the manager, who received me with the utmost civility, and promised to read my play with the first convenience. - By his own appointment I called again in a fortnight, but he was gone out; I returned in a week after, and the poor gentleman was extremely ill; I renewed my vifit in a fortnight after that, and he affured me, he had been so much fatigued with business, that he had not been able as yet to read it to an end; but he would take the first opportunity; and in the mean time, observed, that what he had just seen of it was very entertaining. - I comforted myself with this declaration a few weeks longer, at the end of which I appeared again before his wicket, was let in, and found him laid up with the gout. I no sooner entered his chamber, than looking at me with a languishing eye, he faid, "Mr. Melopoyn, I'm heartily forry of for an accident that has happened during my ill-" ness .- You must know, that my eldest boy, find-" ing your manuscript upon the table, in the dining-" room, where I used to read it, carried it into the "kitchen, and leaving it there, a negligent wench of " a cook-maid, mistaking it for waste paper, has expended it all but a few leaves in fingeing fowls " upon the spit .-- But I hope the misfortune is not " irre" irreparable, fince, no doubt, you have feveral co-

" pies."

I protest to you, my good friend Mr. Random, I was extremely shocked at this information; but the good-natured gentleman seemed to be so much affected with my misfortune, that I suppressed my concern, and told him, that although I had not another copy, I should be able to retrieve the loss by writing another from my memory, which was very tenacious. You cannot imagine how well pleafed Mr. Supple was at this affurance; he begged I would fet about it immediately, and carefully revolve and recollect every circumstance, before I pretended to commit it to paper, that it might be the fame individual play that he had perused.—Encouraged by this injunction, which plainly demonstrated how much he interested himfelf in the affair, I tasked my remembrance and industry, and in three weeks produced the exact image of the former, which was conveyed to him by my good friend, father O Varnish, who told me next day, that Mr. Supple would revise it superficially, in order to judge of its fameness with the other, and then give his final answer. -- For this examination I allotted a week; and in full confidence of feeing it acted in a little while, demanded an audience of the manager, when that term was expired .-- But alas! the feafon had flipt away infenfibly; he convinced me, that if my play had been put into rehearfal at that time, it could not have been ready for performing until the end of March, when the benefit nights came on; confequently it would have interfered with the interest of the players, whom it was not my business to disoblige.

I was fain to acquiesce in these reasons, which to be sure were extremely just; and to reserve my performance for the next season, when he hoped I would not be so unlucky.—Although it was a grievous disappointment to me, who by this time began to want

both money and necessaries; having, on the strength of my expectation from the theatre, launched out into some extravagancies, by which the sum I brought to town was already almost consumed .- Indeed. I ought to be ashamed at this circumstance of my conduct: For, my finances were fufficient, with good economy, to have maintained me comfortably a whole year .- You will perhaps be amazed when I tell you that in fix months I expended not a farthing less than ten guineas: But when one confiders the temptations to which a young man is exposed in this great city, especially if he is addicted to pleasure. as I am, the wonder will vanish, or at least abate. --Nor was the cause of my concern limited to my own fituation entirely: I had writ an account of my good reception to my kinfman the farmer, and defired him to depend upon me for the money he had kindly accommodated me with, about the end of February: which promise I now found myself unable to perform. --- However, there was no remedy but patience: I applied to my landlord, who was a very good-natured man, candidly owned my diffress, and begged his advice in laying down fome plan for my fubfiftence.-He readily promifed to confult his confessor on this fubject, and in the mean time, told me, I was welcome to lodge and board with him, until fortune should put it in my power to make restitution.

Mr. O Varnish being informed of my necessity, offered to introduce me to the author of a weekly paper, who, he did not doubt, would employ me in that way, provided he should find me duly qualified; but upon inquiry, I understood, that this journal was calculated to soment divisions in the commonwealth, and therefore I desired to be excused from engaging in it.—He then proposed that I should write something in the poetical way, which I might dispose of to a bookseller for a pretty sum of ready money, and perhaps establish my own character into

the bargain; this event would infallibly procure friends; and my tragedy would appear next feafon to the best advantage, by being supported both by interest and reputation. — I was charmed with this prospect, and having heard what friends Mr. Pope acquired by his pastorals, set about a work of that kind, and in lefs than fix weeks composed as many eclogues, which I forthwith offered to an eminent bookseller, who defired me to leave them for his perufal, and he would give me an answer in two days. - At the end of that time, I went to him, when he returned the poems, telling me, they would not answer his purpose, and sweetened his refusal, by faying there were some good clever lines in them .-Not a little dejected at this rebuff, which, I learned from Mr. O Varnish, was owing to the opinion of another author, whom this bookfeller always confulted on these occasions, I applied to another person of the same profession, who told me, the town was cloyed with pastorals, and advised me, if I intended to profit by my talents, to write fomething fatirical or luscious, such as the Button Hole, Shockey and Towzer, the Leaky Veffel, &c .- and yet this was a man in years, who wore a reverend periwig, looked like a fenator, and went regularly to church.——Be that as it will, I fcorned to proflitute my pen in the manner he proposed, and carried my papers to a third, who affured me, that poetry was entirely out of his way; and asked if I had got never a piece of secret history, thrown into a feries of letters, or a volume of adventures, fuch as those of Robinson Crusoe, and Colonel Jack, or a collection of conundrums, wherewith to entertain the Plantations.—Being quite unfurnished for this dealer, I had recourse to another, with as little fuccess; and I verily believe was rejected by the whole trade.

I was afterwards perfuaded to offer myself as a translator, and accordingly repaired to a person, who was M 3 said faid to entertain numbers of that class in his pay; he affured me, he had already a great deal of that work on his hands, which he did not know what to do with; observed that translation was a mere drug, that branch of literature being overstocked with an inundation of authors from North Britain; and asked what I would expect per sheet, for rendering the Latin clafficks into English?—That I might not make myfelf too cheap, I determined to fet a high price upon my qualifications, and demanded half a guinea for every translated sheet .- " Half a guinea!" (cried he, flaring at me) then paused a little, and said, he had no occasion for my service at present. - I found my error, and refolving to make amends, fell one half in my demand; upon which he stared at me again, and told me his hands were full. I attempted others, without finding employment, and was actually reduced to a very uncomfortable prospect, when I bethought myself of offering my talents to the printers of halfpenny ballads, and other such occasional essays as are hawked about the fireets .- With this view, I applied to one of the most noted and vociferous of this tribe, who directed me to a person whom I found entertaining a whole crowd of them with gin, bread and cheese; he carried me into a little back-parlour, very neatly furnished, where I fignified my desire of being inrolled among his writers; and was asked, what kind of composition I professed? -- Understanding that my inclination leaned towards poetry, he expressed his satisfaction, telling me one of his poets had loft his fenses, and was confined in Bedlam, and the other was become dozed with drinking drams; fo that he had not done any thing tolerable these many weeks .- When I proposed, that we should enter into terms of agreement, he gave me to underfland, that his bargains were always conditional, and his authors paid in proportion to the fale of their WOIKS.

Having

during

Having therefore fettled these conditions, which (I do affure you) were not very advantageous to me, he affigned me a subject for a ballad, which was to be finished in two hours; and I retired to my garret in order to perform his injunction .- As the theme happened to fuit my fancy, I completed a pretty fort of an ode, within the time prescribed, and brought it to him, big with hope of profit and applause. read it in a twinkling, and to my utter astonishment, told me, it would not do, though indeed, he owned I wrote a good hand, and spelled very well, but my language was too high flown, and of consequence not at all adapted to the capacity and tafte of his cuftomers.—I promised to rectify that mistake, and in half an hour humbled my style to the comprehension of vulgar readers; he approved of the alteration, and gave me some hopes of succeeding in time, though he observed, that my performance was very deficient in the quaintness of expression that pleases the multitude: However, to encourage me, he ventured the expenceof printing and paper, and, if I remember aright, my share of the sale amounted to four pence halfpenny.

From that day I studied the Grub-street manner with great diligence, and at length became fuch a proficient, that my works were in great request among the most polite of the chairmen, draymen, hackney coachmen, footmen, and fervant maids: Nay, I have enjoyed the pleasure of seeing my productions adorned with cuts, pasted upon the wall as ornaments in beer-cellars and coblers' stalls; and have actually heard them fung in clubs of fubstantial tradesmen. But empty praise (you know, my, dear friend) will not supply the cravings of nature. -- I found myself in danger of starving in the midst of all my fame; for of ten fongs I composed, it was well if two had the good fortune to please. For this reason I turned my thoughts to prose, and M 4

during a tract of gloomy weather, published an apparition, on the substance of which I subsisted very comfortably a whole month: I have made many a good meal upon a monster; a rape has often afforded me great satisfaction; but a murder well-timed, was my never sailing resource. What then? I was a most miserable slave to my employers, who expected to be surnished at a minute's warning with prose and verse, just as they thought the circumstances of the times required, whether the inclination was absent or present. Upon my sincerity, Mr. Random, I have been so much pessered and besieged by those children of clamour, that life became a burden to me.



CHAP. LXIII.

The continuation and conclusion of Mr. Melopoyn's story.

I Made shift, notwithstanding, to maintain myself till the beginning of next winter, when I renewed my addresses to my friend Mr. Supple, and was most graciously received .- " I have been thinking " of your affair Mr. Melopoyn (said he) and am determined to shew how far I have your interest at 66 heart, by introducing you to a young nobleman of my acquaintance, who is remarkable for his fine taffe in dramatic writings, and is, besides, a " man of fuch influence, that if once he should ap-" prove of your play, his patronage will support it 46 against all the efforts of envy and ignorance: For "I do affure you, that merit alone will not bring " fuccess .- I have already spoke of your perform-" ance to Lord Rattle, and if you will call at my " house, in a day or two, you shall have a letter of " introcontroduction to his lordship."——I was sensibly touched with this mark of Mr. Supple's friendship, and looking upon my affair as already done, went home and imparted my good fortune to my landlord, who, to render my appearance more acceptable to my patron, procured a suit of new clothes for me on his own credit.

Not to trouble you with idle particulars, I carried my tragedy to his lordship's lodgings, and fent it up along with Mr. Supple's letter, by one of his fervants, who defired me, by his lord's order, to return in a week .- I did fo, and was admitted to his lordship, who received me very courteoufly, told me he had perused my play, which he thought, on the whole, was the best coup d' essai he had ever seen; but that he had marked fome places in the margin, which he imagined might be altered for the better. - I was transported with this reception, and promised (with many acknowledgments of his lordship's generofity) to be governed folely by his advice and direction. --"Well then, (faid he) write another fair copy with " the alterations I have proposed, and bring it to me " as foon as possible; for I am resolved to have it brought on the stage this winter."-You may be fure I fet about this task with alacrity, and although I found his lordship's remarks much more numerous. and of less importance than I expected, I thought it was not my interest to dispute upon trifles with my patron; therefore new-modelled it according to his defire, in less than a month.

When I waited upon him with the manuscript, I found one of the actors at breakfast with his lordship, who immediately introduced him to my acquaintance, and defired him to read a scene of my play.—This task he performed very much to my satisfaction, with regard to emphasis and pronunciation; but he signified his disgust at several words in every page, which I presuming to defend, Lord Rattle told me with a per-

M 5

emptory

emptory look, I must not pretend to dispute with him, who had been a player these twenty years, and understood the economy of the stage better than any man living. I was forced to submit, and his lordship proposed the same actor should read the whole play, in the evening, before some gentlemen of his acquaintance, whom he would convene at his lodg-

ings for that purpofe.

I was present at the reading; and I protest to you, my dear friend, I never underwent such a severe trial in the whole course of my life, as at that juncture; for although the player might be a very honest man, and a good performer, he was excessively illiterate and assuming, and made a thousand frivolous objections, which I was not permitted to anfwer: However, the piece was very much applauded on the whole; the gentlemen present, who, I understood, were men of fortune, promised to countenance and support it as much as they could; and Lord Rattle affuring me that he would act the part of a careful nurse to it, defired me to carry it home, and alter it immediately according to their remarks: --I was fain to acquiesce in his determination, and fulfilled his injunctions with all the expedition in my power; but before I could prefent the new copy, my good friend Mr. Supple had difp fed of his property and patent to one Mr. Brayer; fo that fresh interest was to be made with the new manager. This talk Lord Rattle undertook, having some acquaintance with him, and recommended my performance fo firongly, that it was received.

I looked upon myself now as upon the eve of reaping the fruits of all my labour: I waited a few days in expectation of its being put into rehearsal, and wondering at the delay, applied to my worthy patron, who excused Mr. Brayer on account of the multiplicity of business in which he was involved, and bade me beware of teazing the patentee.—I treasured up

this

this caution and exerted my patience three weeks longer; at the end of which his lordship gave me to understand that Mr. Brayer had read my play, and owned it had undubitable merit; but as he had long been pre-engaged to another author, he could not possibly represent it that season; though, if I would reserve it for the next, and in the interim, make such alterations as he had proposed by observations on the

margin, I might depend upon his compliance.

Thunderstruck at this disappointment, I could not, for fome minutes, utter one fyllable: At length, however, I complained bitterly of the manager's infincerity in amufing me fo long, when he knew from the beginning, that he could not gratify my defire. -But his lordship reprimanded me for my freedom, faid Mr. Brayer was a man of honour, and imputed his behaviour with respect to me, to nothing else but forgetfulness. -- And indeed I have had fome reason fince that time, to be convinced of his bad memory: for, in spite of appearances, I will not allow myself to interpret his conduct any other way. -- Lord. Rattle observing me very much affected with my difappointment, offered his interest to bring on my play at the other house, which I eagerly accepting, he forthwith wrote a letter of recommendation to Mr. Bellower, actor, and prime minister to Mr. Vandal, proprietor of that theatre; and defired me to deliver it with my tragedy without loss of time. --Accordingly, I hastened to his house, where, after having waited a whole hour in a lobby, I was admitted to his presence, and my performance received with great state. -- He told me he was extremely busy at present, but he would peruse it as soon as possible; and bade me call again in a week. I took my leave, not a little aftonished at the port and supercilious behaviour of this stage-player, who had not. treated me with good manners; and began to think: the dignity of a poet greatly impaired fince the days M 6

of Euripides and Sophocles; but all this was nothing

in comparison of what I have since observed.

Well, Mr. Random, I went back at the appointed time, and was told that Mr. Bellower was engaged, and could not fee me .- I repeated my vifit a few days after, and having waited a confiderable time, was favoured with an audience, during which, he faid, he had not as yet read my play.-Nettled at this usage, I could contain myself no longer, but telling him, I imagined he would have paid more deference to Lord Rattle's recommendation, demanded my manuscript with some expressions of resentment. -" Ay, (faid he, in a theatrical tone) with all " my heart." -- Then pulling out a drawer of the bureau, at which he fat, he took out a bundle, and threw it upon a table that was near him, pronouncing the word, "There," with great disdain .-- I took it up, and perceiving, with some surprise, that it was a comedy, told him it did not belong to me; upon which he offered me another, which I also difclaimed .- A third was produced, and rejected for the fame reason. At length he pulled out a whole handful, and spread them before me, saying, " There " are feven—take which you pleafe—or take "them all."-I fingled out my own, and went away, ftruck dumb with admiration at what I had feen-not so much on account of his insolence, as of the number of new plays, which from this circumstance I concluded were yearly offered to the stage. -You may be fure, I did not fail to carry my complaint to my patron, who did not receive it with all the indignation I expected; but taxed me with precipitation, and told me I must lay my account with bearing the humours of the players, if I intended to write for the stage. There is now no other remedy (faid he) but to keep it till the next " feason for Mr. Brayer, and alter it at your leisure, " in the summer, according to his directions."——I Was was now reduced to a terrible alternative, either to quit all hopes of my tragedy, from which I had all along promised myself a large share of fortune and reputation, or to encounter eight long months of adversity in preparing for, and expecting its appearance.—This last penance, painful as it was, stemed most eligible to my resection at that time, and there-

fore I resolved to undergo it.

Why should I tire you with particulars of no consequence? I wrestled with extreme poverty, until the time of my probation was expired; and went to my Lord Rattle, in order to remind him of my affair, when I understood, to my great concern, that his lordship was just on the point of going abroad, and, which was still more unfortunate for me, Mr. Brayer had gone into the country; so that my generous patron had it not in his power to introduce me perfonally, as he intended: However, he wrote a very strong letter to the manager in my savour, and put him in mind of the promise he had made in behalf of

my play.

As foon as I was certified of Brayer's return, I went to his house with this letter, but was told he was gone out .- I called again next day early in the morning, received the fame answer, and was defired to leave my name and bufiness; I did so, and returned the day after, when the fervant still affirmed that his mafter was gone abroad; though I perceived him as I retired, observing me through a window. Incensed at this discovery, I went to a coffee-house hard by, and inclosing his lordship's letter in one from myself, demanded a categorical answer. I sent it to his house by a porter, who returned in a few minutes. and told me Mr. Brayer would be glad to see me at that instant. I obeyed the summons, and was received with fuch profusion of compliments and apologies, that my refentment immediately subsided, and I was even in pain for the concern which this honest man shewed at the mistake of his servant, who, it feems, had been ordered to deny him to every body but me. - He expressed the utmost veneration for his good and noble friend Lord Rattle, whom he should always be proud to ferve; promifed to perufe the play with all dispatch, and give me a meeting upon it; and as a testimony of his esteem, made me a present of a general order for the feafon, by which I should be admitted to any part of the theatre.—This was a very agreeable compliment to me, whose greatest pleafure confisted in seeing dramatic performances, and you need not doubt that I often availed myself of my privilege. As I had an opportunity of being behind the scenes when I pleased, I frequently conversed with Mr. Brayer about my play, and asked when he intended to put it into rehearfal; but he had always fo much business upon his hands, that it remained with him unopened a confiderable while; and I became very uneafy about the season, that wasted apace, when I faw in the papers, another new play advertised, which had been written, offered, accepted and rehearfed in the compass of three months.—You may eafily guess how much I was confounded at this event! I own to you, that in the first transports of my anger, I suspected Mr. Brayer of having acted towards me in the most pitiful perfidious manner; and was actually glad at his disappointment in the success of his favourite piece, which, by the strength of art, lingered till the third night, and then died in a deplorable manner. But now that passion has no share in my reflection, I am willing to ascribe his behaviour to his want of memory or want of judgment, which, you know, are natural defects, that are more worthy of compaffion than reproach.

About this time I happened to be in company with a gentlewoman, who having heard of my tragedy, told me, she was acquainted with the wife of a gentleman, who was very well known to a lady, who

had

ha

uſ

CO

te

ea

ef

ti

p

fc

it

e

it

t

2

0

h

I

had great interest with a person who was intimate with Earl Sheerwit, and that if I pleased, she would use her influence in my behalf .- As this nobleman had the character of a Mæcenas in the nation, and could stamp a value upon any work by his fole countenance and approbation, I accepted her offer with eagerness, in full confidence of seeing my reputation established, and my wishes fulfilled in a very short time, provided that I should have the good fortune to please his Lordship's taste. I withdrew the manufcript from the hands of Mr. Brayer, and committed it to the care of this gentlewoman, who laboured fo effectually in my interest, that in less than a month it was conveyed to the Earl, and in a few weeks after, I had the fatisfaction to hear, that he read and approved it very much. Transported with this piece of intelligence, I flattered myself with the hopes of his interesting himself in its favour; but hearing no more of the matter in three whole months, I began (God forgive me) to suspect the veracity of the perfon who brought me the good tidings: for I thought it impossible, that a man of his rank and character, who knew the difficulty of writing a good tragedy, and understood the dignity of the work, should read and applaud an effay of this kind, without feeling an inclination to befriend the author, whom countenance alone could raise above dependence.-But it was not long before I found my friend very much wronged by my opinion.

You must know that the civilities I had received from Lord Rattle, and the desire he manifested to promote the success of my play, encouraged me to write an account of my bad fortune to his Lordship, who condescended so far as to desire, by letter, a young Squire of a great estate, with whom he was intimate, to espouse my cause, and, in particular, make me acquainted with one Mr. Marmozet a celebrated player, who had lately appeared on the stage

it

2

a

d

V

t

f

t

n

0

g

P

n

0

t

t

V

n

u

je

0

a

0

P

0

n

h

with aftonishing eclat, and bore fuch fway in the house where he acted, that the managers durft not refuse any thing he recommended. The young gentleman whom Lord Rattle had employed for this purpose, being diffident of his own interest with Mr. Marmozet, had recourse to a nobleman of his acquaintance, who, at his folicitation, was fo good as to introduce me to him; and the conversation turning upon my performance, I was not a little furprifed, as well as pleafed to hear, that Earl Sheerwit had spoken very much in its praise, and even sent Mr. Marmozet the copy, with a message expressing a defire that he would act in it next season -Nor was the favourite actor backward in commending the piece, which he mentioned with some expressions of regard, that I do not choose to repeat; assuring me that he would appear in it, provided he should be engaged to play at all during the ensuing season. In the mean time, he defired I would give him leave to peruse it in the country, whither he intended to remove next day, that he might have leifure to confider and point out fuch alterations as might, perhaps, be neceffary for its representation; and took my direction, that he might communicate by letter, the observations he should make. Trusting to these assurances, and the interest which had been made in my behalf, I hugged myself in the expectation of seeing it not only acted, but acted to the greatest advantage, and this I thought could not fail of recompensing me in an ample manner, for the anxiety and affliction I had undergone: But fix weeks being elapsed, I did not know how to reconcile Mr. Marmozet's filence, with his promise of writing to me in ten days after he fet out for the country; however, I was at last favoured with a letter, importing that he had made some remarks on my tragedy, which he would freely impart at meeting, and advising me to put it, without lofs of time, into the hands of that manager, who had the the best company; as he himself was quite uncertain, whether or not he should be engaged that winter. -I was a good deal alarmed at this last part of his letter, and advised about it with a friend, who told me, it was a plain indication of Mr. Marmozet's defire to get rid of his promise: that his pretended uncertainty about acting next winter, was no other than a fcandalous evalion; for, to his certain knowledge, he was already engaged, or at least, in terms with Mr. Vandal; and that his defign was to disappoint me, in fayour of a new comedy, which he had purchased of the author, and intended to bring upon the stage for his own advantage. In short, my dear Sir, this person, who, I must own, is of a fanguine complexion, handled the moral character of Mr. Marmozet with fuch feverity, that I began to suspect him of some particular prejudice, and put myself upon my guard against his infinuations. - I ought to crave pardon for this tedious narration of trivial circumstances, which, however interesting they may be to me, must certainly be very dry and infipid to the ear of one unconcerned in the affair. - But I understand the meaning of your looks, and will proceed. --Well, Sir, Mr. Marmozet, upon his return to town, treated me with uncommon complaifance, and invited me to his lodgings, where he proposed to communicate his remarks, which I confess were more unfavourable than I expected; but I answered his objections, and, as I thought, brought him over to my opinion; for, on the whole, he fignified the highest approbation of the performance. - In the course of our dispute, I was not a little surprised to find this poor gentleman's memory fo treacherous as to let him forget what he had faid to me, before he went out of town, in regard to Earl Sheerwit's opinion of my play, which he now professed himself ignorant of; and I was extremely mortified at hearing from his own mouth, that his interest with Mr. Vandal

was so very low, as to be insufficient of itself to bring a new piece upon the stage. I then begged his advice, and he counselled me to apply to Earl Sheerwit for a message in my favour to the manager, who would not prefume to refuse any thing recommended by fo great a man; and he was fo kind as to promife to fecond this message with all his power.- I had immediate recourse to the worthy gentlewoman my friend already mentioned, who opened the channels of her conveyance with such expedition, that in a few days I had a promise of the message, provided I could affure myself of Mr. Vandal's being unengaged to any other author; for his Lordship did not choose to condescend so far, until he should understand that there was a probability (at least) of succeeding; at the fame time that bleffed me with this piece of news, I was startled at another, by the same canal of communication; which was, that Mr. Marmozet, before he advised me to this application, had informed the Earl, that he had read my play, and found it altogether unfit for the stage. Though I could not doubt the certainty of this intelligence, I believed there was some misapprehension in the case; and without taking any notice of it, told Mr. Marmozet the answer I had been favoured with; and he promised to ask Mr. Vandal the question proposed .--I waited upon him in a day or two, when he gave me to understand, that Mr. Vandal having professed himfelf free of all engagements, he had put my play into his hands, and represented it as a piece strongly recommended by Earl Sheerwit, who, (he affured him) would honour him with a meffage in its favour; and he defired me to call for an answer at Mr. Vandal's house, in three days. - I followed his directions, and found the manager, who, being made acquainted with my business, owned that Mr. Marmozet had given him a manuscript play, but denied that he had mentioned Earl Sheerwit's name. -- When I informed

f

informed him of the circumstances of the affair, he faid, he had no engagement with any author; that he would read my tragedy forthwith; and did not believe he should venture to reject it in contradiction to his Lordship's opinion, for which he had the utmost veneration, but put it into rehearfal without loss of time. I was fo much intoxicated with this encouragement, that I overlooked the mysterious conduct of Mr. Marmozet, and attended the manager at the time appointed, when, to my infinite confusion, he pronounced my play improper for the flage, and rejected it accordingly. As foon as I could recollect myfelf from the diforder into which this unexpected refusal had thrown me, I expressed a defire of hearing his objections, which were fo groundless, indistinct, and unintelligible, that I persuaded myself he had not at all perused the piece, but had been prompted by fomebody, whose lessons he had not rightly retained. However, I have been fince informed, that the poor man's head, which was not naturally very clear, had been disordered with superflition, and that he laboured under the tyranny of a wife, and the terrors of hell fire at the same time. ----Precipitated in this manner, from the highest pinnacle of hope, to the abyss of despondence, I was ready to fink under the burden of my affliction; and in the bitterness of my anguish, could not help entertaining some doubts of Mr. Marmozet's integrity, when I recollected and compared the circumstances of his conduct towards me. I was encouraged in this fuspicion, by being told, that my Lord Sheerwit had spoke of his character with great contempt; and, in particular, refented his infolence in opposing his own tafte to that of his Lordship concerning my tragedy.-While I hesitated between different opinions of the matter, that friend, who (as I told you before) was a little hot-headed, favoured me with a vifit, and having heard a circumstantial account of the

d

at

I

whole affair, could not contain his indignation, but affirmed without ceremony, that Marmozet was the tole occasion of my disappointment; that he had acted from first to last with the most perfidious dissimulation, cajoling me with infinuating civilities, while he underhand employed all his art and influence to prejudice the ignorant manager against my performance; that nothing could equal his hypocrify but his avarice, which engroffed the faculties of his foul fo much, that he scrupled not to be guilty of the meanest practices to gratify that fordid appetite; that in consequence of this disposition, he had prostituted his honour in betraying my inexperience, and in undermining the interest of another author of established reputation, who had also offered a tragedy to the stage, which he thought would interfere with the success of the comedy he had bought, and determined to bring on at all events.

I was shocked at the description of such a monster, which I could not believe existed in the world, bad as it is, and argued against the affeverations of my friend, by demonstrating the bad policy of such behaviour, which could not fail of entailing infamy upon the author; and the small temptation that a man of Mr. Marmozet's figure and fuccess, could have to confult his interest in such a groveling manner, which must create contempt and abhorrence of him in his patrons, and effectually deprive him of the countenance and protection he now enjoys in fuch an eminent degree. He pretended to laugh at my fimplicity, and asked if I knew for which of his virtues he was fo much careffed by the people of fashion. -"It is not (said he) for the qualities of his heart, "that this little parasite is invited to the tables of "Dukes and Lords, who hire extraordinary cooks

« quence

[&]quot; for his entertainment: His avarice they see not,

[&]quot;his ingratitude they feel not, his hypocrify accom"modates itself to their humours, and is of confe-

" quence pleasing; but he is chiefly courted for his " buffoonery, and will be admitted into the choicest " parties of quality for his talent of mimicking Punch " and his wife Joan, when a poet of the most ex-" quifite genius, is not able to attract the least re-" gard."-God forbid, Mr. Random, that I should credit affertions that degrade the dignity of our superiors fo much, and represent that poor man as the most abject of all beings! No! I looked upon them as the hyperboles of passion; and though that comedy of which he spoke, did actually appear, I dare not doubt the innocence of Mr. Marmozet, who, I am told, is as much as ever in favour with the Earl; a circumftance that, furely, could not be, unless he had vindicated his character to the fatisfaction of his Lordship.—Pray forgive this long digression, and give me the hearing a little longer; for, thank heaven! I am now near the goal.

Baffled in all my attempts, I despaired of seeing my play acted; and bethought myfelf of choosing some employment, that might afford a fure, though mean fubfistence; but my landlord, to whom I was by this time confiderably indebted, and who had laid his account with having his money paid all in a heap, from the profits of my third night, could not brook his disappointment, therefore made another effort in my behalf, and by dint of interest, procured a mesfage from a lady of fashion to Mr. Brayer, who had always professed a great veneration for her, desiring that he would fet up my play forthwith, and affuring him that she and all her friends would support it in the performance: To strengthen my interest, she engaged his best actors in my cause; and in short exerted herself so much, that it was again received, and my hopes began to revive. - But Mr. Brayer, honest man, was so much engroffed by business of vast confequence, though to appearance he had nothing at all to do, that he could not find time to read it until the feason was pretty far advanced; and read it he must, for notwithstanding his having perused it before, his memory did not retain one circumstance of the matter.

At length he favoured it with his attention, and having proposed certain alterations, sent his duty to the lady who patronized it, and promised, on his honour, to bring it on next winter, provided these alterations should be made, and the copy delivered to him before the end of April.—With an aching heart, I submitted to these conditions, and performed them accordingly: But fortune owed me another unforeseen mortification; Mr. Marmozet, during the summer, became joint patentee with Mr. Brayer, so that when I claimed performance of articles, I was told, he could do nothing without the consent of his partner, who was pre-engaged to another author.

My condition was rendered desperate by the death of my good friend and landlord, whose executors obtained a judgment against my effects, which they seized, turned me out into the streets naked, friendless, and forlorn; there I was arrested at the suit of my taylor, and thrown into this prison, where I have made shift to live these since weeks on the bounty of my fellow-prisoners, who, I hope, are not the worse for the instruction and good offices, by which I manifest my gratitude; but in spite of all their charitable endeavours, my life was scarce tolerable, until your uncommon benevolence enabled me to enjoy it

t

f

with comfort.

$\phi_{0}^{*}(x_{0}^{*}) = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{2}$

CHAP. LXIV.

I Shall not make any reflections on this flory, in the course of which the reader must perceive how egregiously the simplicity and milky disposition of this worthy man, had been duped and abused by a fet of scoundrels, who were so habituated to falsehood and equivocation, that I verily believe, they would have found the utmost difficulty in uttering one syllable of truth, though their lives had depended upon their fincerity.-Notwithstanding all I had suffered from the knavery and felfishness of mankind, I was amazed and incensed at the base indifference which suffered such uncommon merit as he possessed, to languish in obscurity, and struggle with all the miseries of a loathsome jail; -and should have blessed the occasion that secluded me from such a perfidious world, had not the remembrance of the amiable Narcissa preserved my attachment to that society of which she constituted a part.—The picture of that lovely creature was the conftant companion of my folitude: How often did I contemplate the resemblance of those enchanting features that first captivated my heart !- How often did I weep over those endearing fcenes which her image recalled; and how often did I curse my perfidious fate for having robbed me of the fair fair original! In vain did my imagination flatter me with schemes of future happiness; surly reason always interposed, and in a moment overthrew the unfubstantial fabrick, by chastifing the extravagance of . my hope, and representing my unhappy situation in the right point of view: In vain did I fly for refuge to the amusements of the place, and engage in the parties of Jackson, at cards, billiards, nine-pins, and fives; a train of melancholy thoughts took possession of my foul, which even the conversation of Melopoyn could not divert .- I ordered Strap to inquire every day at Banter's lodgings, in expectation of hearing again from my charmer; and my disappointment confiderably augmented my chagrin .- My affectionate valet was infected with my forrow, and often fat with me whole hours without speaking, uttering figh for figh, and shedding tear for tear .--This fellowship increased our diftemper; he became incapable of business, and was discarded by his master; while I, feeing my money melt away, without any certainty of deliverance, and in short, all my hopes frustrated; grew negligent of life, lost all appetite, and degenerated into fuch a floven, that during the space of two months, I was neither washed, shifted, nor shaved; so that my face, rendered meagre with abstinence, was obscured with dirt, and overshadowed with hair, and my whole appearance squalid and even frightful; when, one day, Strap brought me notice, that there was a man below who wanted to fpeak with me. Roused at this intelligence, and in full hopes of receiving a letter from the dear object of my love, I ran down stairs with the utmost precipitation, and found, to my infinite surprise, my generous uncle Mr. Bowling! Transported at the fight, I fprung forward to embrace him. Upon which he started aside with great agility, drew his hanger and put himself upon his guard, crying, " Avast, brother, " avast! sheer off-Yo ho! you turnkey, why « don't

"don't you keep a better look-out? here's one of your crazy prisoners broke from his lashings, I do "suppose."—I could not help laughing heartily at his mistake; but this I soon rectified by my voice, which he instantly recollected, and shook me by the hand with great affection, testifying his concern at

feeing me in fuch a miserable condition.

e

;

y

3

,

e

1,

h

1-

d

e

in

of

i-

e-

t,

ne

r, hy

it

I conducted him to my apartment, where in prefence of Strap, whom I introduced to him as one of my best friends, he gave me to understand, that he was just arrived from the coast of Guinea, after having made a pretty successful voyage, in which he had acted as mate, until the ship was attacked by a French privateer; that the captain being killed during the engagement, he had taken the command, and was fo fortunate as to fink the enemy; after which exploit he fell in with a merchant-ship from Martinico, laden with fugar, indigo, and fome filver; and, by virtue of his letter of marque, attacked, took, and brought her fafe into Kinfale in Ireland, where she was condemned as a lawful prize; by which means he had not only got a pretty fum of money, but also acquired the favour of his owners, who had already conferred upon him the command of a large ship, mounted with twenty-nine pounders, ready to fail upon a very advantageous voyage, which he was not at liberty to discover. And he assured me, that it was with the greatest difficulty he had found me, in consequence of a direction left for him at his lodgings at Wapping.

I was rejoiced beyond measure, at this account of his good fortune; and, at his defire, recounted all the adventures that had happened to me fince we parted.—When he understood the particulars of Strap's attachment to me, he squeezed his hand very cordially, and promised to make a man of him; then giving me ten guineas for my present occasion, took a direction for the taylor who arrested me, and

Vol. II. N went

went away, in order to discharge the debt, telling me at parting, that he would soon setch up all my

Iceway with a wet fail.

I was utterly confounded at this fudden transition. which affected me more than any reverse I had formerly felt; and a crowd of incoherent ideas rushed fo impetuously upon my imagination, that my reason could neither feparate nor connect them; when Strap. whose joy had manifested itself in a thousand sooleries, came into my room with his shaving utenfils, and without any previous intimation, began to lather my beard, whiftling with great emotion all the while .--I started from my reverie, and being too well acquainted with Strap, to trust myself in his hands while he was under such agitation, desired to be excused, sent for another barber, and suffered myself to be trimmed.—Having performed the ceremony of ablution, I shifted, and dressing in my gayest apparel, waited for the return of my uncle, who was agreeably surprised at my sudden transformation.

This beneficent kinfman had fatisfied my creditor, and obtained an order for my discharge, so that I was no longer a prisoner; but as I had some reluctance to part with my friends and fellows in diffress, I prevailed upon Mr. Bowling to favour us with his company, and invited Mr. Melopoyn and Jackson to spend the evening at my aparament, where I regaled them with a fupper, good wine, and the news of my release, on which they heartily congratulated me, notwithstanding the loss of my company, which they were pleafed to fay, they should severely feel .-As for Jackson, his misfortune made so little impresfion on himself, and he was altogether so loose, indifferent, and indifcreet, that I could scarce pity his situation: But I had conceived a veneration and friendship for the poet, who was, in all respects, an object much more worthy of compassion and regard. When our guests withdrew, and my uncle had retired,

by

tired, with an intention to visit me next morning, I made up a bundle of some linen, and other necesfaries, and bidding Strap carry them to Mr. Melopoyn's ledging, went thither myfelf, and preffed it upon his acceptance, with five guineas, which with much difficulty he received, affuring me at the fame time, that he should never have it in his power to make satisfaction. I then asked if I could serve him any other way: to which he answered, "You have " already done too much;" and unable to contain the emotions of his foul any longer, burst into tears, and wept aloud. - Moved at the spectacle, I lest him to his repose, and when my uncle returned in the morning, represented his character in such a favourable light, that the honest seaman was affected with his diffres, and determined to follow my example, in presenting him with five pieces more: Upon which, that I might fave him some confusion, I advised Mr. Bowling to inclose it in a letter to be delivered by Strap after we should be gone.

This was accordingly done. I took a formal leave of all my acquaintance in the jail, and just as I was about to step into a hackney coach at the gate, Jackson calling me, I returned, and he asked me in a whifper, if I could lend him a shilling? His demand being fo moderate, and in all likelihood, the last he would make upon me, I flipt a guinea into his hand, which he no fooner perceived, than he cried, "O " Jesus! a guinea!" then laying hold of a button of my coat, broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter; and when his convultion was ended, told me, I was an honest fellow, and let me go. - The coachman was ordered to drive to Mr. Bowling's lodgings, where, when we arrived, he entered into a ferious discourse with me, on the subject of my situation, and proposed that I should fail with him in quality of his furgeon; in which case, he would put me in a method of getting a fortune in a few years, N 2

by my own industry; and affured me, that I might expect to inherit all that he should die possessed of. provided I should furvive him. — Though I was penetrated with a fense of his generosity, I was startled at a proposal that offered violence to my love, and fignified my fentiments on that head, which he did not feem to relish; but observed that love was the fruit of idleness, that when once I should be employed in bufiness, and my mind engaged in making money, I should be no more troubled with these filly notions, which none but your fair-weathered Jacks, who have nothing but their pleasure to mind, ought to entertain. - I was piqued at this infinuation, which I looked upon as a reproach, and without giving myfelf time to deliberate, accepted his offer. -- He was overjoyed at my compliance, carried me immediately to his chief owner, with whom a bargain was struck; fo that then I could not retract with honour, had I been ever fo much averse to the agreement. - That I might not have time to cool, he bade me draw out a lift of medicines for a complement of five hundred men, adapted to the diffempers of hot climates, and fufficient for a voyage of eighteen months; and carry it to a certain wholesale apothecary, who would also provide me in two well-qualified mates .-- While I was thus employed, Strap came in, and looked very blank, when he understood my resolution: However, after a paule of some minutes, he infifted upon going along with me; and at my defire was made ship's steward by captain Bowling, who promifed to be at the expence of fitting him out, and to lend him two hundred pounds to purchase an adventure.

When I had delivered my list of medicines, chosen a couple of my own countrymen for mates, and befooke a set of chirurgical instruments, my uncle told me, that by his last voyage, he had cleared almost three thousand pounds, one third of which he would immediately make over and put into my

hands ;

hands; that he would procure for me credit to the value of as much more, in such goods as would turn to best account in the country to which we were bound; and that although he looked up n my interest as his own, he would keep the remaining part of his fortune in his own disposal, with a view of preferring his independence, and the power of punishing me, in case I should not make a good use of what he

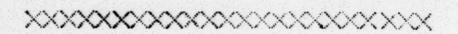
had already bestowed.

Without troubling the reader with an account of the effect which this furprifing generofity had upon my mind, I shall only fay, that his promifes were inflantly performed, and an invoice of merchandife proper for the voyage prefented to me, that I might purchase the go ds, and ship them with all expedition. -- In the midft of this hurry, the remembrance of my charming Narcissa often interposed, and made me the most miserable of all mortals. I was distracted with the thought of being torn from her, perhaps, for ever; and though the hope of feeing her again might have supported me under the torments of separation, I could not reflect upon the anguish she must feel at parting with me, and the inceffant forrows to which her tender bosom would be exposed during my absence, without being perced with the deepest affliction! As my imagination was daily and nightly upon the rack to invent some method of mitigating this cruel floke, or at least of acquitting my love and honour in the opinion of this gentle creature, I at length stumbled upon an expedient, with which the reader will be made acquainted in due time; and in consequence of my determination, became less uneasy and disturbed.

My business being finished, and the ship ready to fail, I resolved to make my last appearance among my acquaintance at the other end of the town, where I had not been seen since my imprisonment; and as I had, by the advice of my uncle, taken off some ve-

ry rich clothes for fale, I put on the gayest suit in my possession, and went in a chair to the coffee house I used to frequent, where I found my friend Banter fo confounded at the magnificence of my drefs, that when I made up to him, he gazed at me with a look of aftonishment, without being able, for some minutes, to open his lips; -then pulling me afide by the fleeve, and fixing his eyes on mine, accosted me in this manner: -- " Random, where the devil have " you been? eh! -- What is the meaning of all this "finery? --- Oho! I understand you. --- You are " just arrived from the country! what! the roads " are good, eh! - Well, - Random, you are a bold " fellow, and a lucky fellow !-- but take care, " the pitcher goes often to the well, but is broke at " laft." So faying, he pointed to his collar; by which gesture, and the broken hints he had ejaculated, I found he suspected me of having robbed on the highway; and I laughed very heartily at his supposition .- Without explaining myself any further, I told him he was mistaken in his conjecture; that I had been for some time past with the relation of whom he had frequently heard me speak; and that as I should set out next day upon my travels, I had come to take my leave of my friends, and to receive of him the money he had borrowed from me, which, now that I was going abroad, I should certainly have occasion for. ---- He was a little disconcerted at this demand; but recollecting himself in a moment, fwore in an affected passion, that I had used him extremely ill, and he would never forgive me, for having, by this fhort warning, put it out of his power to free himself of an obligation he could no longer bear. I could not help finiling at this pretended delicacy, which I commended highly, telling him, he needed not be uneafy on that score, for I would give him a direction to a merchant in the city, with whom I would leave a discharge for the sum,

to be delivered upon payment. - He professed much joy at this expedient, and with great eagerness asked the person's name and place of abode, which he forthwith wrote in his pocket-book, affuring me, that he should not be long in my debt .- This affair, which I knew he would never after think of, being fettled to his fatisfaction, I fent cards to all my friends, defiring the favour of their company at a tavern in the evening, when they honoured my invitation, and I had the pleasure of treating them in a very elegant manner, at which they expressed equal admiration as applause. Having enjoyed ourselves till midnight, I took my leave of them, and was well-nigh ft fled with careffes; next day I fet out with Strap in a postchaife for Gravesend, where we went on board, and the wind ferving, weighed anchor in less than twelve hours, --- Without meeting with any accident, we reached the Downs, where we were obliged to cone to an anchor, and wait for an easterly wind to carry us out of the channel.



CHAP. LXV.

I set out for Sussex——consult Mrs. Sagely——atchieve an interview with Narcissa——return to the ship——we get clear of the channel—I learn our destination—we are chased by a large ship——the company are dismayed, and encouraged by the coptain's speech—our pursuer happens to be an English man of war—we arrive at the coast of Guinea, purchase 400 negroes, sail for Paraguay, get safe into the river of Plate, and sell our cargo to great advantage.

T was now I put in execution the scheme I had projected at London; and asking leave of the captain, for Strap and me to stay on shore till the wind should become favourable, my request was granted, because he had orders to remain in the Downs until he should receive some dispatches from London, which he did not expect in less than a week.-Having imparted my refolution to my trufty valet, who (tho' he endeavoured to dissuade me from fuch a rash undertaking) would not quit me in the enterprize, I hired horses, and set out immediately for that part of Suffex where my charmer was confined, which was not above thirty miles diffant from Deal, where we mounted.—As I was perfectly well acquainted with the extent of the Squire's estate and influence, I halted within five miles of his house, where we remained 'till the twilight, at which time we fet forward, and by the favour of a dark night, reached

reached a copfe about half a mile from the village where Mrs. Sagely lived .- Here we left our horses tied to a tree, and went directly to the house of my old benefactress, Strap trembling all the way, and venting ejaculatory petitions to heaven for our fafety. Her habitation being quite folitary, we arrived at the door without being observed, when I ordered my companion to enter by himself, and in case there should be company with her, deliver a letter which I had writ for that purpose, and say that a friend of hers in London, understanding that he intended to travel this road, had committed it to his care.—He rapped at the door, to which the good old matron coming, told him, that being a lone woman, he must excuse her, if she did not open it, until he had declared his name and bufinefs .- He answered, that his name was unknown to her, and that his business was to deliver a letter, which (to free her from all manner of apprehension) he would convey to her through the space between the door and threshold. This he instantly performed; and she no sooner read the contents, which specified my being present, than she cried, " If the person who wrote this letter " be at hand, let him speak, that I may be affured by his voice whether or not I may fafely admit "him."-I forthwith applied my mouth to the keyhole, and pronounced, "Dear mother, you need " not be afaid, it is I, so much indebted to your " goodness, who now crave admittance."-She knew my voice, and opening the door immediately, received me with a truly maternal affection, manifeiting by the tears the let fall, her concern lest I thou'd be discovered, for she had been informed of every thing that had happened between Narciffa and me. from the dear captive's own mouth. ---- When I explained the motive of my journey, which was no other than a defire of feeing the object of my love before I should quit the kingdom, that I might in N 5 person person convince her of the necessity I was under to leave her, reconcile her to that event, by describing the advantages that in all probability would attend it, repeat my vows of eternal constancy, and enjoy the melancholy pleafure of a tender embrace at parting, -I fay, when I had thus fignified my intention, Mrs. Sagely told me, that Narcissa, upon her return from the Bath, had been fo strictly watched, that no body but one or two of the servants, devoted to her brother, was admitted to her presence; that afterwards she had been a little enlarged, and was permitted to fee company; during which indulgence, the had been feveral times at her cottage; but of late the had been betrayed by one of the servants, who discovered to the squire, that he had once carried a letter from her to the post-house directed to me; upon which information, she was now more confined than ever, and that I could have no chance of feeing her, unless I would run the risque of getting into the garden, where she and her maid were every day allowed to take the air, and lie hid until I should have an opportunity of speaking to them-an adventure attended with such danger, that no man in his right wits would attempt it. This enterprize, hazardous as it was, I refolved to perform, in spite of all the arguments of Mrs. Sagely, who reasoned, chid, and intreated by turns; and the tears and prayers of Strap, who conjured me on his knees, to have more regard to myself as well as to him, than to tempt my own destruction in such a precipitate manner. I was deaf to every thing, but the suggestions of my love; and ordering him to return immediately with the horses to the inn from whence we fet out, and wait for my coming in that place. he at fift peremptorily refused to leave me, until I perfuaded him, that if our horses should remain where they were 'till day-light, they would certainly be discovered, and the whole county alarmed. On this

confideration, he took his leave in a forrowful plight, kiffed my hand, and weeping, cried, "God knows " if ever I thall fee you again." --- My kind landlady finding me obstinate, gave me her best advice how to behave in the execution of my project; and after having perfunded me to take a little refreshment, accommodated me with a bed, and left me to my repose. ---- Early in the morning, I arose, and armed with a couple of loaded pittols and a hanger, went to the back of the Squire's garden, climbed over the wall, and, according to Mrs. Sagely's direction, concealed myfelf in a thicket, hard by an alcove that terminated a walk at a good distance from the house, which (I was told) my mistress chiefly frequented. -Here I absconded from five o'clock in the morning to fix in the evening, without feeing a human creature; at last I perceived two women approaching, whom, by my throbbing heart, I fcon recognized to be the adorable Narcissa and Miss Williams. I fe't the ftrongest agitation of foul at the fight; and gueffing that they would repose themselves in the alcove, stept into it unperceived, and laid upon the stone-table a picture of myle f in minature, for which I had fat in London, purposing to leave it with Narcissa before I should go abroad. I exposed it in this manner, as an introduction to my own appearance, which, without some previous intimation, I was afraid might have an unlucky effect upon the delicate nerves of my fair enflaver; and then withdrew in o the thicket, where I could hear their discourse, and suit myself to the circumstances of the occasion. -- A shev advanced, I observed an air of meianchol, in the countenance of Narcissa, blended with such unspeakable fweetness, that I could scarce refrain from flying into her arms, and kiffing away the pearly drop that flood collected in each bewitching eye. According to my expectation, she entered the alcove, and perceiving fomething on the table, took it up. No fooner did N 6

re

01

ci

the cast her eye upon the features, than startled at the resemblance, she cried, "Good God!" and the roses instantly vanished from her cheeks .-- Her confidante, alarmed at this exclamation, looked at the picture, and, flruck with the likeness, exclaimed, " O Jesus! the very features of Mr. Random!" Narcissa having recollected herself a little, said, Whatever angel brought it hither as a comfort to e me in my affliction, I am thankful for the benefit, " and will preserve it as the dearest object of my " care." So faying, the kiffed it with furprifing ardour, shed a flood of tears, and then deposited the lifeless image in her lovely bosom. Transported at these symptoms of her unaltered affection, I was about to throw myself at her feet, when Miss Williams, whose reflection was less engaged than that of her mistress, observed that the picture could not transport itself hither, and that she could not help thinking I was not far off. - The gentle Narciffa ftarting at this conjecture, answered, "Heaven forbid! for " although nothing in the universe could yield me of fatisfaction equal to that of his presence for one " poor moment, in a proper place, I would rather " forfeit his company --- almost for ever, than fee 46 him here, where his life would be exposed to fo " much danger."-I could no longer restrain the impulse of my passion, but breaking from my concealment, stood before her, when she uttered a fearful thriek, and fainted in the arms of her companion. I flew towards the treasure of my foul, clasped her in my embrace, and with the warmth of my kiffes, brought her again to life. O! that I were endowed with the expression of a Raphael, the graces of a Guido, the magic touches of a Titian, that I might reprefent the fond concern, the chaftened rapture, and ingenuous blush that mingled on her beauteous face, when she opened her eyes upon me, and pronounced, " O heavens! is it you?" Iam

I am afraid I have already encroached upon the reader's patience, with the particulars of this amour, on which (I own) I cannot help being impertinently circumstantial. I shall therefore omit the less material passages of this interview, during which I convinced her reason, tho' I could not appeale the sad prefages of her love, with regard to the long vovage, and dangers I must undergo .-- When we had spent an hour, (which was all she could spare from the barbarity of her brother's vigilance) in lamenting over our hard fate, and in repeating our reciprocal vows, Miss Williams reminded us of the necessity there was for our immediate parting; and fure, lovers never parted with such forrow and reluctance as we. But because my words are incapable of doing justice to this affecting circumstance, i am obliged to draw a veil over it, and observe, that I returned in the dark to the house of Mrs. Sagely, who was overjoyed to hear of my fuccess, and opposed the tumults of my grief with such strength of reason, that my mind regained in some measure its tranquillity; and that very night, after having forced upon the good gentlewoman a purfe of twenty guineas, as a token of my gratitude and esteem, I took my leave of her, and set out on foot for the inn, where my arrival freed honest Strap from the horrors of unutterable dread.

We took horse immediately, and alighted early next morning at Deal, where I found my uncle in great concern on account of my absence, because he had received his dispatches, and must have weighed with the first sair wind, whether I had been on board or not.——Next day, a brisk easterly gale springing up, we set sail, and in eight and forty hours got

clear of the channel.

When we were about 200 leagues to westward of the Land's-end, the captain taking me apart into the cabbin, told me, that, now he was permitted by his instructions, he would disclose the intent and destina-

tion of our voyage: "The thip, faid he, which has been fixed out at a great expence, is bound " for the coast of Guinea, where we shall exchange of part of our cargo for flaves and gold dust; from " thence we will transport our regroes to Buenos " Ayres in New Spain, where (by virtue of paffof ports obtained from our own court, and that of " Madrid) we will dispose of them and the goods " that remain on board for filver, by means of our " fupercargo, who is perfectly well acquainted with the coast, the lingo, and inhabitants." - Being thus let into the fecret of our expedition, I borrowed of the supercargo, a Spanish grammar, dictionary, and some other books of the same language, which I studied with fuch application, that before we arrived in New Spain, I could maintain a converfation with him in that tongue .-- Being arrived in the warm latitudes, I ordered (with the captain's confent) the whole ship's company to be blooded and purged, myfelf undergoing the fame evacuation, in order to prevent those dangerous fevers to which northern constitutions are subject in hot climates; and I have reason to believe that this precaution was not unserviceable, for we lost but one failor during our whole passage to the coast.

One day, when we had been about five weeks at fea, we descried to windward a large ship bearing down upon us with all the fail she could carry. Upon which my uncle ordered the studding-sails to be hoisted, and the ship to be cleared for engaging; but finding, that (to use the seaman's phrase) we were very much wronged by the ship which had us in chace, and which by this time had hoisted French colours, he commanded the studding-sails to be taken in, the courses to be clewed up, the main-top sail to be backed, the tompions to be taken out of the guns, and every man to repair to his quarters. While every body was busied in the performance of

these

th

fu

m

C

"

66

"

66

in

ta

di

C

gi

ti

h

fo

to

ti

to

d

..

W

C

fu

th

b

these orders, Strap came upon the quarter deck, trembling and looking aghaft, and, with a voice half suppressed by scar, asked if I thought we were a match for the veffel in purfut of us. Observing his conflernation, I faid, "What! are you afraid, "Strap?" " Afraid! (he replied) n-n no; what " should I be afraid of? I thank God I have a " clear conscience; but I believe it will be a bloody " battle, and I wish you may not have occasion for " another hand to affish you in the cock-pit." -- I immediately perceived his drift, and making the captain acquainted with his fituation, defined he might be flationed below with me and my mates. My uncle, incenfed at his publianimity, bade me fend him down instantly, that his fear might not infect the ship's company; whereupon I told the poor fleward, that I had begged him for my affiltant, and defired him to go down and help my mates to get ready the infruments and dreffings .--- Notwithstanding the fatisfaction he must have felt at these tidings, he affected a shyness of quitting the upper-deck; and faid, he hoped I did not imagine he was afraid to do his duty above board; for he believed himself as well prepared for death as any man in the ship, no disparagement to me or the captain .--- I was disgusted at this affectation, and in order to punish his hypocrify, affured him, he might take his choice either of going down to the cockpit with me, or of staying upon deck during the engagement. Alarmed at this indifference, he replied, "Well, to oblige you, I'll go down, " but remember it is more for your fake than my " own." So faying, he disappeared in a twinkling, without waiting for an answer. - By this time we could observe two tire of guns in the ship which purfued us, and which was now but two fhort miles aftern. This discovery had an evident effect upon the failors, who did not scruple to fay, that we should be tore to pieces, and blown cut of the water, and that

hoi

Th

imr

lee

of

wa

hin

COL

up

an

det

fu;

his

cru

his

de

gu

W

fa

pa

ta

ly

th

W

fi

21

h

p

d

n

n

n

t

n

that if in case any of them should lose their precious limbs, they must go a-begging for life, for there was no provision made by the merchants for those poor fouls who are maimed in their fervice. The captain understanding this backwardness, ordered the crew abaft, and spoke to them thus; " My lads, I am 66 told you hang an a---fe--- I have gone to fea thirty " years, man and boy, and never faw English failors " afraid before. - Mayhap you think I want to exof pose you for the lucre of gain .--- Whosoever thinks " fo, thinks a damned lie, for my whole cargo is infured; so that in case I should be taken, my lofs would not be great -The enemy is stronger than we to be fure. -- What then? have we not a chance for carrying away one of her matte, and fo ee get clear of her? --- If we find her too hard for us, "tis but striking at last .-- If any man is hurt in the engagement, I promife on the word of an honest " feaman, to make him a recompense according to " his lofs. --- So now, you that are lazy, lubberly, " cowardly dogs, get away, and fculk in the hold, " and bread-room; and you that are jolly boys, " ftand by me, and let us give one broad-fide for the "honour of Old England."—This eloquent harangue was fo well adapted to the disposition of his hearers, that one and all of them, pulling off their hats, waved them over their heads, and faluted him with three chears; upon which he fent his boy for two large case bottles of brandy, and having treated every man with a dram, they repaired to their quarters, and waited impatiently for the word of command. - I must do my uncle the justice to say, that in the whole of his disposition, he behaved with the utmost intrepidity, conduct, and deliberation .-- The enemy being very near, he ordered me to my flation, and was just going to give the word for hoisting the colours, and firing, when the apposed Frenchman, hauled down his white pennant, jack and enfign, heisted

hoisted English ones, and fired a gun a head of us: This was a joyful event to captain Bowling, who immediately shewed his colours, and fired a gun to leeward: Upon which the other ship ran along-side of us, hailed him, and giving him to know that the was an English man of war of forty guns, ordered him to heift out his boat and come on board. - This command he obeyed with the more alacrity, because, upon inquiry, he found that the was commanded by an old mess-mate of his, who was overjoyed to see him, detained him to dinner, and fent his barge for the fupercargo and me, who were very much careffed on his account. — As this commander was deflined to cruize upon the French, in the latitude of Martinico, his flem and quarters were adorned with white flowersde-lis, and the whole shell of the ship so much disguifed for a decoy to the enemy, that it was no wonder my uncle did not know her, although he had failed on board of her many years. - We kept company with her four days, during which time the captains were never afunder, and then parted, our course lying different from hers.

In less than a fortnight after our separation we made the land of Guinea, near the mouth of the river Gambia, and trading along the coast as far to the southward of the Line as Angola and Bengula, in less than six months disposed of the greatest part of our cargo, and purchased sour hundred negroes, my adventure

having been laid out in gold dust.

Our complement being made up, we took our departure from Cape Negroe, and arrived in the Rio de la Plata in fix weeks, having met with nothing remarkable in our voyage, except an epidemic fever, not unlike the jail-diffemper, which broke out among our flaves, and carried off a good many of the ship's company; among whom I lost one of my mates, and poor Strap had well nigh given up the ghost.—Having produced our passport to the Spanish

nish governor, we were received with great courtesy, fold our slaves in a very few days, and could have put off five times the number at our own price; tho' we were obliged to smuggle the red of our merchandize, consisting of European bale goods, which however we made shift to dispose of at a great advantage.



CHAP. LXVI.

I am invited to the villa of a Spanish Don, where we meet with an English gentleman, and make a very interesting discovery—we leave Buenos Ayres, and arrive at Jamaica.

O UR ship being freed from the disagreeable lading of Negroes, to whom indeed I had been a miserable slave, since our leaving the coast of Guinea, I began to enjoy myself, and breathe with pleafure the pure air of Paraguay, this part of which is reckened the Montpelier of South America, and has obtained, on account of its climate, the name of Buen's Ayres. - It was in this del cious place, that I gave myself entirely up to the thoughts of my dear Narcifia, whose image still kept possession of my breast, and whose charms, enhanced by absence, appeared to my imagination, if pessible, more engaging than ever! I calculated the profits of my voyage, which even exceeded my expectation; refolved to purchase a handsome finecure upon my arrival in England, and if I should find the Squire as averse to me as ever, marry his fifter by flealth; and in case our family should increase, rely upon the generosity of my uncle, who was by this time worth a confiderable fum. While

good naliz one gent frier

W

iects,

we w

men,

our 6

hous ance Eng

who nou vill wh

fo is abl corty fer ha

ap wi rit to

at fti co

p: hi

h

While I amused myself with these agreeable proiects, and the transporting hopes of enjoying Narcissa, we were very much careffed by the Spanish gentlemen, who frequently formed parties of pleasure for our entertainment, in which we made excursions a good way into the country. Among those who fignalized themselves by their civility to us, there was one Don Antonio de Ribera, a very polite young gentleman, with whom I had contracted an intimate friendship, who invited us one day to his countryhouse, and as a further inducement to our compliance, promifed to procure for us the company of an English fignior, who had been settled in those parts many years, and acquired the love and effeem of the whole province by his affability, good fense, and honourable behaviour.

We accepted his invitation, and fet out for his villa, where we had not been longer than an hour, when the person arrived in whose favour I had been fo much prepoffessed .- He was a tall man, remarkably well-shaped, of a fine mien and appearance, commanding respect, and seemed to be turned of forty; the features of his face were faddened with a referve and gravit, which in other countries would have been thought the effect of melancholy; but here appeared to have been contracted by his commerce with the Saniards, who are remarkable for that feverity of countenance. Understanding from Don Antonio that we were his countrymen, he faluted us all round very complaifantly, and fixing his eyes very attentively on me, uttered a deep figh. -- I had been ftruck with a profound veneration for him at his fift coming into the room; and no fooner observed this expression of his forrow, directed, as it were, in a particular manner to me, than my heart took part in his grief. I sympathized involuntarily, and fighed in my turn. - Having asked leave of our entertainer, he accosted us in English, professed his satisfaction

at feeing so many of his countrymen in such a remote place, and asked the captain, who went by the name of Signior Thoma, from what part of Britain he had failed, and whither he was bound.——My uncle told him that we had failed from the river Thames, and were bound for the same place, by the way of Jamaica, where we intended to take in a lading of

lugar.

Having fatisfied himfelf in these and other particulars about the state of the war, he gave us to understand that he had a longing defire to revisit his native country, in confiquence of which, he had already transmitted to Europe the greatest part of his fortune in neutral bottoms, and would willingly embark the rest of it with himself, in our ship, provided the captain had no objection to such a passenger. My uncle very prudently replied, that for his part he should be glad of his company, if he could procure the confent of the governor, without which he durst not admit him on board, whatever inclination he had to oblige him .- The gentleman approved of his discretion, and telling him, that there would be no difficulty in obtaining the connivance of the governor, who was his good friend, shifted the conversation to another subject.

I was overjoyed to hear his intention, and already interested myself so much in his favour, that had he been disappointed, I should have been very unhappy: In the course of our entertainment, he eyed me with uncommon attachment; I selt a surprising attraction towards him! when he spoke, I listened with attention and reverence: the dignity of his deportment filled me with affection and awe; and in short, the emotions of my soul, in presence of this stranger, were

strong and unaccountable.

Having spent the best part of the day with us, he took his leave, telling captain Thoma, that he should hear from him in a short time: He was no sooner

gone,

gone,

factio

he ha

repu

in hi

rish

first

vent

conf

reca

the

of

eag

his

Ne

mu

Do

Do

te

WI

m

al

fp

ft

b

fi

V

I

I

gone, than I asked a thousand questions about him, of Don Antonio, who could give me no other satisfaction, than that his name was Don Rodrigo, that he had lived fisteen or sixteen years in these parts, was reputed rich, and supposed to have been unfortunate in his younger years, because he was observed to nou-rish a pensive melancholy, even from the time of his first settlement among them; but that no body had ventured to inquire into the cause of his sorrow, in consideration of his peace, which might suffer in the

recapitulation of his misfortunes.

d

e

f

f

S

3

d

-

d

e

e

1

t

9

d

I was seized with an irresistible defire of knowing the particulars of his fate, and enjoyed not one hour of repose during the whole night, by reason of the eager conceptions that inspired me, with regard to his story, which I resolved (if possible) to learn .--Next morning, while we were at breakfast, three mules richly caparifoned arrived with a meffage from Don Rodrigo, defiring our company, and that of Don Antonio, at his house, which was fituated about ten miles farther up in the country-I was pleafed with this invitation, in confequence of which we mounted the mules which he had provided for us, and alighted at his house before noon .-- Here we were splendidly entertained by the generous stranger, wno fill feemed to shew a particular regard for me, and after dinner, made me a present of a ring set with a beautiful amethyst, the production of that country, faying at the same time, that he was once bleffed with a fon, who, had he lived, would have been nearly of my age. This observation delivered with a profound figh, made my heart throb with violence; a crowd of confused ideas rushed upon my imagination, which, while I endeavoured to unravel, my uncle perceived my absence of thought, and tapping me on the shoulder, said, "Oons! are you asleep, Rory!" Before I had time to reply, Don Rodrigo, with uncommon eagerness of voice and look, pronounced, " Pray, captain, what is the young gentlemin's name ?"

"

66

66

66

in

ga.

m

th

bo

C

ir

C

10

ti

e

I

t

1

" name?"---" His name (faid my uncle) is " Roderick Random." --- " Gracious Powers!" (cried the stranger, starting up) --- " And his. " mother's ?"-" His mother (answered the captain " amazed) was called Charlotte Bowling."----" O bounteous heaven! (exclaimed Don Rodrigo, 66 springing across the table, and clasping me in his arms) my fon! my fon! have I found thee again? 66 do I hold thee in my embrace, after having lost and despaired of seeing thee so long?" So saying, he fell upon my neck and wept aloud with joy; while the power of nature operating strongly in my breast, I was lost in rapture, and while he pressed me to his heart, let fall a shower of tears into his bosom. ----His utterance was choaked up a good while, by the agitation of his foul: at length he broke out into " Mytterious Providence !-- O my dear Charlotte; " there yet remains a pledge of our love! and fuch a " pledze! -- fo found! O infinite goodness; let. ee me adore thy all wife decrees!" Having thus expressed himself, he kneeled upon the floor, lifted up his eyes and hands to heaven, and remained fome minutes in a filent extaly of devotion: I put myself in the same posture, adored the all-good Disposer in a prayer of mental thankfgiving; and when his ejaculation was ended, did homage to my father, and craved his parental bleffing. He hugged me again with unutterable fondness, and having implored the protection of heaven upon my head, raifed me from the groun!, and prefented me as his fon to the company, who wept in concert over this affecting scene. Among the rest, my uncle did not fail to discover the goodness and joy of his heart: Albeit unusel to the melting mord, he blubbered with great tenderness, and wringing my father's hand, cried, "Brother Random, "I'm rejoiced to see you--God be praised for this " happy meeting." -- -- Don Rodrigo, understanding that he was his brother-in-law, embraced him affectionately, faying, " Are you my Charlotte's brother? 66 Alas!

"----- Alas! unhappy Charlotte! but why should I repine? we shall meet again, never more to part! "--- Brother, you are truly welcome.---- Dear son, I am transported with unspeakable joy!----- This day is a jubilee----my friends and servants shall

" fhare my fatisfaction."

his.

ain

go,

his

n ?

oft

ıg,

y ;

ny

ne

m.

by.

to

a'

X -

qı

ne

If

in

1-

d

n

e

n

r

e

et .

While he dispatched messengers to the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, to announce this event, and gave orders for a grand entertainment, I was fo much affected with the tumults of passion, which assailed me on this great, sudden, and unexpected occasion, that I fell fick, fevered, and in less than three hours, became quite delirious; so that the preparations were countermanded, and the joy of the family converted into grief and despair .---- Physicians were instantly called, I was plentifu'ly blooded in the foot, my lower extremities were bathed in a decoction of falutiferous herbs; in ten hours after I was taken ill, I enjoyed a critical fweat, and next day felt no remains of the distemper, but an agreeable lassitude, which did not hinder me from getting up. - During the progress of this fever, which, from the term of its duration, is called Ephemera, my father never once quitted my bed-fide, but administered the prefcriptions of the physicians with the most pious care; while captain Bowling manifested his concern by the like attendance.—I no fooner found myfelf delivered from the difease, than I bethought myself of my honest friend, Strap; and refolving to make him happy forthwith, in the knowledge of my good fortune, told my father in general, that I had been infinitely obliged to this faithful adherent; and begged, he would indulge me fo far as to fend for him, without letting him know my happiness, until he could receive an account of it from my own mouth.

My request was instantly complied with, and a messenger with a spare mule detached to the ship, carrying orders from the captain to the mate to send the steward by the bearer. — My health being, in the

mean time, re-established, and my mind composed, I began to relish this important turn of my fortune. in reflecting upon the advantages with which it must be attended; and as the idea of my lovely Narcissa always joined itself to every scene of happiness I could imagine, I entertained myself now with the profpect of possessing her in that distinguished sphere, to which fhe was entitled by her birth and qualifications .- Having often mentioned her name while I was deprived of my fenses, my father gueffed that there was an intimate connexion between us, and discovering the picture which hung in my bosom by a ribbon, did not doubt that it was the resemblance of my amiable mistress: In this belief he was confirmed by my uncle, who told him that it was the picture of a young woman, to whom I was under promife of. marriage. --- - Alarmed at this piece of information, Don Rodrigo took the first opportunity of queftioning me about the particulars of this affair, which, when I had candidly recounted, he approved of my passion, and promised to contribute all in his power towards its fuccess. Though I never doubted his generofity, I was transported on this occasion, and throwing myself at his feet, told him, he had now completed my happiness; for without the possession of Narcissa, I should be miserable among all the pleasures of life. —— He raised me with a smile of paternal fondness; faid, he knew what it was to be in love; and observed, that if he had been as tenderly beloved by his father, as I was by mine, he should not now perhaps have cause-Here he was interrupted by a figh, the tear rushed into his eye, he suppressed the dictates of his grief, and the time being opportune, defired me to relate the passages of my life, which my uncle had told him were manifold and furprifing .--- I recounted the most material circumitances of my fortune, to which he liftened with wonder and attention, manifesting from time

time to time those different emotions, which my different fituations may be supposed to have raised in a parent's breast; and when my detail was ended, blessed God for the adversity I had undergone, which, he said, enlarged the understanding, improved the heart, steeled the constitution, and qualified a young man for all the duties and enjoyments of life, much better than any education which assume could bestow.

When I had thus fatisfied his curiofity, I discovered an inclination to hear the particulars of his flory, which he gratified, by beginning with his marriage, and proceeded to the day of his disappearing, as I have related in the first part of my memoirs. " Care-" less of life (continued he) and unable to live in a of place where every object recalled the memory of " my dear Charlotte, whom I had loft through the " barbarity of an unnatural parent, I took my leave of you, my child, then an infant, with a heart " full of unutterable woe, but little suspecting, that " my father's unkindness would have descended to " my innocent orphan; and fetting out alone at " midnight for the nearest sea-port, early next " morning got on board a ship, bound, as I had " heard, for France, and bargaining with the maf-" ter for my passage, bade a long adieu to my native country, and put to fea with the first fair wind. "The place of our destination was Granville, but " we had the missortune to run upon a ridge of rocks " near the island of Alderney called the Caskets, " where the fea running high, the ship went to " pieces, the boat funk along-fide, and every foul on " board perished, except myself, who, by the affit-" ance of a grating, got ashore on the coast of Nor-" mandy. I went directly to Caen, where I was fo " lucky as to meet with a Count, whom I had for-" merly known in my travels: With this gentleman " I set out for Paris, where I was recommended by " him and other friends, as a tutor to a young noble-VOL II. ee man,

n

d

.

,

e

of

-

2-

1-

m

" man, whom I accompanied to the court of Spain. -- There we remained a whole year, at the end of which my pupil being recalled by his father, I " quitted my office and staid behind, by the advice " of a certain Spanish grandee who took me into his or protection, and introduced me to another noblee man, who was afterwards created viceroy of Peru. "-He infifted on my attending him to his government in the Indies, where, however, by reason of ee my religion, it was not in his power to make my fortune any other way than by encouraging me to trade, which I had not long profecuted when my ec patron died, and I found myself in the midst of ftrangers, without one friend to support or protect " me: Urged by this confideration, I fold my effects and removed to this country, the governor of " which having been appointed by the viceroy, was my intimate acquaintance. Here has heae ven prospered my endeavours, during a residence of fixteen years, in which my tranquillity was ne-" ver invaded, but by the remembrance of your mo-"ther, whose death I have in secret mourned without ceasing; and the reflection of you, whose fate " I could never learn, notwithstanding all my inquieries, by means of my friends in France, who, after the most strict examination, could give me no other account, than that you went abroad fix " years ago, and was never after heard of .- I could of not rest satisfied with this imperfect information, and though my hope of finding you was but lan-66 guid, refolved to go in quest of you in person: of for which purpose, I have remitted to Holland the ec value of twenty thousand pounds, and am in pol-. allon of fifteen thousand more, with which I in-" ended to embark myfelf on board of Captain " newling, before I discovered this amazing stroke of Providence, which you may be fure has not " altered my intention."

My

My father having entertained us with this agreeable sketch of his life, withdrew in order to relieve Don Antonio, who in his absence had done the honours of his house; and I was just dressed for my appearance among the guests, when Strap arrived

from the ship.

He no fooner entered the grand apartment in which I was, and faw the magnificence of my apparel, than his speech was lost in amazement, and he gaped in filence at the objects that furrounded him. -I took him by the hand, observed that I had fent for him to be a witness and sharer of my happiness, and told him I had found a father. - At these words he started, and after having continued some minutes with his mouth and eyes wide open, cried, "Aha! -odd, I know what! go thy ways, poor Narciffa, and go thy ways fomebody elfe-well-"Lord, what a thing is love? - God help us! " are all our mad pranks and protestations come to "this? and have you fixed your habitation in " this distant land! God prosper you-I find we " must part at last-for I would not leave my poor " carcals so far from my native home, for all the " wealth of the universe!" With these ejaculations, he began to fob and make wry faces; upon which I affured him of his mistake, both in regard to Narcissa, and my staying in Paraguay, and informed him as briefly as I could, of the great event which had happened.—Never was rapture more ludicroufly expreffed, than in the behaviour of this worthy creature, who cried, laughed, whiftled, fung, and danced, all in a breath; his transport was scarce over, when my father entered, who no fooner understood that this was Strap, than he took him by the hand, faying, " Is this the honest man, who befriended you to " much in your diffress? you are welcome to my " house, and I will soon put it in the power of my " fon to reward you for your good offices in his be"half; in the mean time, go with us, and partake of the repast that is provided." Strap, wild as he was with joy, would by no means accept of the proferred honour, crying, "God forbid! I know my distance—your worship shall excuse me." And Don Rodrigo sinding his modesty invincible, recommended him to his major-domo, to be treated with the utmost respect; while he carried me into a large saloon, where I was presented to a numerous company, who loaded me with compliments and caresses, and congratulated my father in terms not proper for me to repeat.

Without specifying the particulars of our entertainment, let it suffice to say, it was at the same time elegant and sumptuous, and the rejoicings lasted two days: After which, Don Rodrigo tettled his affairs, converted his effects into silver and gold, visited and took leave of all his friends, who were grieved at his departure, and honoured me with considerable presents; and coming on board of my uncle's ship, with the first savourable wind we sailed from the Rio de la Plata, and in two months came safe to an anchor in the harbour of Kingston in the island of Jamaica.



CHAP. LXVII.

I visit my old friend Thomson—we set sail for Europe, meet with an odd adventure—arrive in England—I ride across the country from Portsmouth to Sussex—converse with Vrs. Sagely, who informs me of Narcissa's being in London—in consequence of this intelligence, I proceed to Canterbury—meet with my old friend Morgan—arrive at London—visit Narcissa—introduce my father to her—he is charmed with her good sense and beauty—we come to a determination of demanding her brother's consent to our marriage.

Inquired, as foon as I got ashore, about my generous companion Mr. Thomson; and hearing that he lived in a flourishing condition, upon the estate left him by his wife's father, who had been dead some years, I took horse immediately, with the consent of Don Rodrigo, who had heard me mention him with great regard, and in a few hours reached the place of his habitation.

I should much wrong the delicacy of Mr. Thomfon's sentiments, to say barely he was glad to see me: He selt all that the most sensible and disinterested friendship could seel on this occasion, introduced me to his wise, a very amiable young lady, who had already blessed him with two sine children; and being as yet ignorant of my circumstances, frankly offered me the assistance of his purse and interest. I thanked

03

him for his generous intention, and made him acquainted with my fituation, on which he congratulated me with great joy, and after I had flaid with him a whole day and night, accompanied me back to Kingston, to wait upon my father, whom he invited to his house: Don Rodrigo complied with his request, and having been handsomely entertained during the space of a week, returned extremely well satisfied with the behaviour of my friend and his lady, to whom at parting he prefented a very valuable diamond ring, as a token of his esteem. During the course of my conversation with Mr. Thomson, he gave me to understand, that his and my old commander captain Oakhum was dead fome months, and that immediately after his death, a discovery had been made of some valuable effects that he had feloniously fecreted out of a prize, by the affistance of Dr. Mackshane, who was now actually in prison on that account, and being deflitute of friends, sublisted solely on the charity of my friend, whose bounty he had implored in the most abject manner, after having been the barbarous occasion of driving him to that terrible extremity on board of the Thunder, which we have formerly related .- What soever this wretch might have been guilty of, I applauded Mr. Thomson's generofity towards him in his diffrefs, which wrought fo much upon me also, that I sent him ten pistoles, in fuch a private manner, that he could never know his benefactor.

While my father and I were carefled among the gentlemen on shore, captain Bowling had writ to his owners, by the packet, which sailed a few days after our arrival, signifying his prosperous voyage hitherto, and desiring them to ensure his ship and cargo homeward bound; after which precaution he applied himself so heartily to the task of loading his ship, that with the affistance of Mr. Thomson, she was sull in less than six weeks. This kind gentleman likewise pro-

cured for Don Rodrigo bills upon London for the greatest part of his gold and silver, by which means it was secured against the risk of the seas and the enemy; and before we failed, supplied us with such large quantities of all kinds of stock, that not only we, but the ship's company, fared sumptuously during the voy-

age.

Every thing being ready, we took our leave of our kind entertainers, and going on board at Port Roya', fet fail for England on the first day of June. -We beat up to windward, with fine easy weather; and one night, believing ourselves near Cape Tiberoon, lay to, with an intention to wood and water next morning in the bay. While we remained in this fituation, a failor having drank more new rum than he could carry, staggered over-board, and notwithstanding all the means that could be used to preserve him, went to the bottom and disappeared. About two hours after this melancholy accident happened, as I enjoyed the cool air on the quarter deck, I heard a voice rifing, as it were out of the fea, and calling, "Ho, the ship, ahoy!" Upon which one of the men upon the forecastle cried, " I'll be d-n'd, if "that an't Jack Marlinspike, who went over-" board!" Not a little surprised at this event, I jumped into the boat that lay along-fide, with the fecond mate and four men, and rowing towards the place, from whence the voice (which repeated the hail) feemed to proceed, we perceived fomething floating upon the water; when we had rowed a little farther, we discerned it to be a man riding upon a hencoop, who, feeing us approach, pronounced with a hoarfe voice, " D-n your bloods! why did you " not answer when I hailed?" Our mate, who was a veritable seaman, hearing this falute, said, " By " G- my lads, this is none of our man. - This is the " devil ___ pull away for the ship." The fellows obeyed his command, without question, and were 0 4

already some fathoms on our return, when I infifted on their taking up the poor creature, and prevailed upon them to go back to the wreck, which when we came near the second time, and fignified our intention. we received an answer of, " Avast, avast --- what " ship, brother?" Being satisfied in this particular, he cried, " D-n the ship, I was in hopes it had been my own—where are you bound?" fatisfied his curiofity in this particular too; upon which he suffered himself to be taken on board, and after having been comforted with a dram, told us, he belonged to the Veluvio man of war, upon a cruize off the island of Hispaniola; that he had fallen over-board about four and twenty hours ago, and the ship being under fail, they did not chuse to bring to, but toffed a hencoop over-board for his convenience, upon which he was in good hopes of reaching the Cape next morning; howfomever, he was as well content to be aboard of us, because he did not doubt that we should meet his ship; and if he had gone ashore in the bay, he might have been taken prisoner by the French. - My uncle and father were very much diverted with the account of this fellow's unconcerned behaviour; and in two days, meeting with the Vesuvio, as he expected, sent him on board of her, according to his defire.

Having beat up successfully the windward passage, we stretched to the northward, and falling in with a westerly wind, in eight weeks arrived in soundings, and in two days after made the Lizzard.—It is impossible to express the joy I selt at the sight of English ground! Don Rodrigo was not unmoved, and Strap stream of gladness.—The sailors profited by our satisfaction; the shoe that was nailed to the mass, being quite filled with our liberality.—My uncle resolved to run up into the Downs at once, but the wind shifting when we were a-breast of the isle of Wight, he was obliged to turn into St. Helens, and come

come to Spithead, to the great mortification of the crew, thirty of whom were immediately pressed on board of a man of war.

My father and I went ashore immediately at Portsmouth, leaving Strap with the captain to go round with the ship and take care of our effects; and I discovered so much impatience to see my charming Narcissa, that my father permitted me to ride across the country to her brother's house; while he should hire a post-chaise for London, where he would wait for

me at a place to which I directed him.

Fired with all the eagerness of passion, I took post that very night, and in the morning reached an inn, about three miles from the Squire's habitation; here I remained till next evening, allaying the torture of my impatience with the rapturous hope of feeing that divine creature after an absence of eighteen months, which far from impairing, had raifed my love to the most exalted pitch! Neither were my reflections free from apprehensions, that sometimes intervened in spite of all my hope, and represented her as having yielded to the importunity of her brother, and bleffed the arms of an happy rival. My thoughts were even maddened with the fear of her death; and when I arrived in the dark at the house of Mrs. Sagely, I had not for some time courage to desire admittance, left my foul should be shocked with dismal tidings. At length, however, I knocked, and no fooner certified the good gentlewoman of my voice than she opened the door, and received me with a most affectionate embrace, that brought tears into her aged eyes: "For heaven's fake! dear mother, (cried 66 1) tell me, how is Narcissa? is she the same that " I left her?" She bleffed my ears with faying, " She " is as beautiful, in as good health, and as much yours " as ever." Transported at this assurance, I begged to know if I could not see her that very night; when this fage matron gave me to understand that my mistress

mistress was in London, and that things were strangely altered in the Squire's house since my departure; that he had been married a whole year to Melinda, who at first found means to wean his attention so much from Narcissa, that he became quite careless of that lovely fifter, comforting himself with the clause in his father's will, by which she should forfeit her fortune, by marrying without his confent; - that my mistress being but indifferently treated by her fisterin-law, had made use of her freedom some months ago, and gone to town, where she was lodged with Miss Williams, in expectation of my arrival; and had been peftered with the addresses of Lord Quiverwit, who finding her heart engaged, had fallen upon a great many shifts, to persuade her that I was dead; but finding all his artifices unsuccessful, and despairing of gaining her affection, he had confoled himself for her indifference, by marrying another lady fome weeks ago, who had already left him on account of fome family uneafinefs .- Besides this interesting information, the told me, that there was not a great deal of harmony between Melinda and the Squire, who was so much disgusted at the number of gallants who continued to hover about her even after marriage, that he had hurried her down into the country much against her own inclination, where their mutual animolicies had rifen to fuch a height, that they preferved no decency before company or fervants, but abused one another in the groffest terms.

This good old gentlewoman, to give me a convincing proof of my dear Narcissa's unalterable love, gratisted me with a sight of the last letter she had tavoured her with, in which I was mentioned with so much honour, tenderness, and concern, that my soul was fired with impatience, and I determined to ride all night, that I might have it the sooner in my power to make her happy.—Mrs. Sagely perceiving my eagerness, and her maternal affection being equally divided

between

found

between Narciffa and me, begged leave to remind me of the fentiments with which I went abroad, that would not permit me for any felfish gratification to prejudice the fortune of that amiable young lady, who must entirely depend upon me, after having bestowed herself in marriage. I thanked her for her kind concern, and as briefly as possible described my flourishing fituation, which afforded this humane perion infinite wonder and fatisfaction. I told her, that now I had an opportunity to manifest my gratitude for the obligations I owed, I would endeavour to make her old age comfortable and easy; as a step to which, I proposed she should come and live with Narcissa and me. - This venerable gentlewoman was fo much affected with my words that the tears ran down her ancient cheeks; the thanked heaven that I had n t belied the prefages she had made, on her first acquaintance with me; acknowledging my generofity, as the called it, in the most elegant and pathetic expressions; but declined my proposal on account of her attachment to the dear melancholy cottage where she had so peacefully consumed her solitary widowhood. Finding her immovable on this subject, I infifted on her accepting a present of thirty guineas, and took my leave, rejolving to accommodate her with the fame fum annually, for the more comfortable fupport of the infirmities of old age.

Having rode all night, I found myself at Canterbury in the morning, where I alighted to procure fresh horses; and as I walked into the inn, perceived an apothecary's shop on the other side of the street, with the name of Morgan over the door: Alarmed at this discovery, I could not help thinking that my old mess mate had settled in this place, and upon inquiry, found my conjecture true, and that he was married lately to a widow in that city, by whom he had got three thousand pounds. Rejoiced at this intelligence, I went to his shop as soon as it was open, and

0 6

66

ce

lie

ti

e

b

found my friend behind the counter, busy in preparing a glyfter. I faluted him at entrance, with "Your fervant, Mr. Morgan." --- Upon which he looked at me, and replying, "Your most humble " fervant, goot Sir;" rubbed his ingredients in the mortar, without any emotion. "What! (faid I) " Morgan, have you forgot your old mess-mate?" At these words, he looked up again, and starting, cried, " As Got is my-fure it cannot-yes by my 66 salfation, I pelieve it is my dear friend Mr. Ran-" tom."-He was no fooner convinced of my identity, than he threw down the peftle, overset the mortar, and jumping over the board, fwept up the contents with his clothes, flew about my neck, hugged me affectionately, and daubed me all over with turpentine and the yolks of eggs, which he had been mixing when I came in. —Our mutual congratulations being over, he told me, that he found himself a widower upon his return from the West Indies; that he had got interest to be appointed surgeon of a man of war, in which capacity he had ferved fome years, until he married an apothecary's widow, with whom he now enjoyed a pretty good fum of money, peace, and quiet, and an indifferent good trade---He was very defirous of hearing my adventures, which I affured him I had not time to relate, but told him in general, my circumstances were very good, and that I hoped to see him when I should not be in such a hurry as at present. ——He infifted however on my staying breakfast, and introduced me to his wife, who feemed to be a decent fensible woman, pretty well fricken in years. In the course of our conversation, he shewed the sleeve buttons I had exchanged with him at our parting in the West Indies, and was not a little proud to see that I had preserved his with the tame care. When I informed him of Mackshane's condition, he feemed at first to exult over his diffres; but after a little recollection, said, "Well, he has " paid "forgife him likewise." He expressed great concern for the soul of captain Oakhum, which he believed was now gnashing its teeth: but it was some time before I could convince him of Thomson's being alive, at whose good fortune, nevertheless, he was

extremely glad.

Having renewed our protestations of friendship, I bade the honest Welchman and his spouse farewel. and taking post-horses, arrived at London that same night, where I found my father in good health, to whom I imparted what I had learned of Narcissa.-This indulgent parent approved of my intention of marrying her, even without a fortune, provided her brother's confent could not be obtained; promifed to make over to me in a few days a sufficiency to maintain her in a fashionable manner, and expressed a defire of feeing this amiable creature, who had captivated me so much.—As I had not slept the night before, and was besides fatigued with my journey, I found myself under a necessity of taking some repose. and went to bed accordingly: next morning about ten o'clock, took a chair, and, according to Mrs. Sagely's directions, went to my charmer's lodgings, and inquired for Miss Williams .- I had not waited in the parlour longer than a minute, when this young woman entered, and no fooner perceived me, than she shrieked and ran backward; but I got between her and the door, and clasping her in my arms, brought her to herself with an embrace. "Good heaven! " (cried she) Mr. Random, is it you indeed! my " mistress will run distracted with joy."-I told her, it was from an apprehension that my sudden appearance might have some bad effect on my dear Narcissa, that I had defired to fee her first, in order to concert fome method of acquainting her mistress gradually with my arrival. She approved of my conduct, and after having yielded to the suggestions of her own friendship, friendship, in asking if my voyage had been successful, charged herfelf with that office, and left me glowing with defire of feeing and embracing the object of my love. In a very little time I heard fomebody coming down flairs in hafte, and the voice of my angel pronounce, with an eager tone, "O heaven! is it possible! where is he?" How were my faculties aroused at this well known found! and how was my foul transported, when she broke in upon my view. in all the bloom of ripened beauty! Grace was in all ber steps, beaven in ber eye, in every gesture dignity and love!—You whose fouls are susceptible of the most delicate impressions, whose tender bosoms have felt the affecting vicifitudes of love, who have fuffered an absence of eighteen long months from the dear object of your hope, and found at your return the melting fair, as kind and as constant as your heart could wish, do me justice on this occasion, and conceive what unutterable rapture possessed us both, while we flew into each other's arms! This was no time for speech, -locked in a mutual embrace, we continued fome minutes in a filent trance of joy!-When I thus encircled all that my foul held dear, --- while I hung over her beauties, -beheld her eyes sparkle, and every feature flush with virtuous fondness; when I saw her enchanting bosom heave with undissembled rapture, and knew myself the happy cause—Heavens! what was my fituation! I am tempted to commit my paper to the flames, and to renounce my pen for ever, because its most ardent and lucky expression so poorly describes the emotions of my foul. O adorable Narcissa! (cried I) O miracle of beauty, love, and truth! I at last fold thee in my arms! I at last can call thee mine! No jealous brother shall thwart our happiness again; fortune hath at length recompensed me for all my fufferings, and enabled me to do justice to my love. The dear creature smiled inestably charming, and with a look of bewitching tenderness, faid. faid, "And shall we never part again?" "Never! (I replied) thou wondrous pattern of all earthly persection! never, until death shall divide us! by this ambrosial kiss, a thousand times more fragrant than the breeze that sweeps the orange grove, I never more will leave thee!"

As my first transport abated, my passion grew turbulent and unruly. I was giddy with flanding on the brink of blifs, and all my virtue and philosophy were scarce sufficient to restrain the in rdinate fallies of defire. - Narcissa perceived the conslict within me. and with her usual dignity of prudence, called off my imagination from the object in view, and with eager expressions of interested curiofity, defired to know the particulars of my voyage. - In this I gratified her inclination, bringing my flory down to the present hour: She was infinitely surprised at the circumstance of my finding my father, which brought tears into her lovely eyes. She was transported at hearing that he approved my flame, discovered a longing defire of being introduced to him, congratulated herfelf and me upon my good fortune, and observed that this great and unexpected stroke of fate seemed to have been brought about by the immediate direction of Providence. Having entertained ourselves some hours with the genuine effusions of our fouls, I obtained her confent to complete my happiness as soon as my father should judge it proper, and applying with my own hands a valuable necklace, composed of diamonds and amethysts fet alternately, which an old spanish lady at Paraguay had presented me with, I took my leave, promiting to return in the afternoon with Don Rodrigo. - When I went home, this generous parent inquired very affectionately about the health of my dear Narcissa, to whom that I might be the more agreeable, he put into my hand a deed, by which I found myself in possession of fifteen thousand pounds, exclusive of the profits of my own merchandize, which amounted to three thousand more. - After dinner I accompanied him to the lodging of my miffress, who being dreffed for the occafion, made a most dazzling appearance. I could perceive him struck with her figure, which I really think was the most beautiful that ever was created under the fun. He embraced her tenderly, and told her, he was proud of having a fon who had spirit to attempt, and qualifications to engage, the affections of fuch a fine lady. - She blushed at this compliment. and with eyes full of the foftest languishment turned upon me, faid, she should have been unworthy of Mr. Random's attention, had the been blind to his extraordinary merit. I made no other answer than a low bow. My father, fighing, pronounced, "Such " once was my Charlotte!" while the tear rushed into his eye, and the tender heart of Narcissa manifested itself in two precious drops of sympathy, which, but for his presence, I would have kissed Without repeating the particulars of our conversation, I shall only observe, that Don Rodrigo was as much charmed with her good fense, as with her appearance; and she was no less pleased with his understanding and polite address .- It was determined that he should write to the squire, fignifying his approbation of my passion for his sister, and offering a fettlement which he should have no reason to reject; and that, if he should refuse the proposal, we would crown our mutual wishes without any farther regard to his will.

CHAP. LXVIII.

My father makes a present to Narcissa—the letter is dispatched to her brother—I appear among my acquaintance—Banter's behaviour the Squire refuses his consent——my uncle comes to town——approves of my choice——I am married——we meet the Squire and his lady at the play——our acquaintance is courted.

FTER having spent the evening to the satisfaction of all present, my father addressed himfelf thus to Narcissa, " Madam, give me leave to consider you hereafter as my daughter, in which " capacity I infift upon your accepting this first in-" flance of my paternal duty and affection." With these words he put into her hand a bank-note of gool, which the no fooner examined, than with a low curtfey she replied, "Dear Sir, tho' I have not " the least occasion for this supply, I have too great " a veneration for you, to refuse this proof of your " generolity and este m, which I the more freely " receive, because I already look upon Mr. Random's " interest as inseparably connected with mine." He was extremely well pleafed with her frank and ingenuous reply; upon which we faluted, and wished her good night. The letter, at my request, was dispatched to Suffex by an express, and in the mean time, Don Rodrigo, to grace my nuptials, hired a ready furnished house, and set up a very handsome equipage.

Though I passed the greatest part of the day with the darling of my soul, I sound leisure sometimes to be among my former acquaintance, who were astonished at the magnificence of my appearance: Banter

fu

Find-

in particular was confounded at the strange vicisfitudes of my fortune, the causes of which he endeavoured in vain to discover, until I thought fit to disclose the whole secret of my last voyage, partly in confideration of our former intimacy, and partly to prevent unfavourable conjectures which he and others, in all probability, would have made in regard to my circumstances. He professed great satisfaction at this piece of news, and I had no cause to believe him infincere, when I confidered that he would now look upon himself as acquitted of the debt he owed me, and at the same time flatter himself with hopes of borrowing more.—I carried him home to dinner with me, and my father liked his conversation fo much, that upon hearing his difficulties, he defired me to accommodate him for the prefent, and inquire if he would accept of a commission in the army, towards the purchase of which he would willingly lend him money. Accordingly, I gave my friend an opportunity of being alone with me, when, as I expected, he told me that he was just on the point of being reconciled to an old rich uncle, whose heir he was, but wanted a few pieces for immediate expence, which he defired I would lend him, and take his bond for the whole. His demand was limited to ten guineas; and when I put twenty into his hand, he stared at me for some moments, then putting it into his purse, said, "Ay, 'tis all one -you shall have the whole in a very short time." When I had taken his note, to fave the expence of a bond, I expressed some surprise that a fellow of his spirit should loiter away his time in idleness, and asked why he did not choose to make his fortune in the army - ' What! " (faid he) theow away my money upon a fubaltern's commission, to be under the command of a parcel of scoundrels who have raised themselves above " me by the most infamous practices! no, I love " independency too well to facrifice my life, health, " and pleasure for such a pitiful consideration." ----

Finding him averse to this way of life, I changed the subject, and returned to Don Rodrigo, who had just received the following epistle from the Squire.

Oncerning a letter which I received, subscrib'd R. Random, this is the answer.—As for you, I know nothing of you.—Your son, or pretended fon, I have seen;—if he marries my sister, at his peril be it; I do declare, that he shall not have one farthing of her fortune, which becomes my property, if she takes a husband without my consent.—Your settlement, I do believe, is all a sham, and yourself no better than you should be; but if you had all the wealth of the Indies, your son shall never match in our family, with the consent settlement of

" Orfon Topehall."

My father was not much surprised at this polite letter, after having heard the character of the author: and as for me, I was even pleased at his refusal, because I now had an opportunity of shewing my disinterested love. By his permission I waited on my charmer; and having imparted the contents of her brother's letter, at which she wept bitterly, in spite of all my confolation and carefles, the time of our marriage was fixed at the distance of two days .- During this interval, in which my foul was wound up to the last stretch of rapturous expectation, Narcissa endeavoured to reconcile some of her relations in town to her marriage with me; but finding them all deaf to her remonstrances, either out of envy or prejudice; she told me with the most enchanting sweetness, while the tears bedewed her lovely cheeks, " Sure the world will no longer question your ge-" nerosity, when you take a poor forlorn beggar to " your arms." Affected with her forrow, I pressed the fair mourner to my breast, and swore that she was more dear and welcome on that account, because fhe

he

uj

ir

a

she had facrificed her friends and fortune to her love for me.-My uncle, for whose character she had a great veneration, being by this time come to town. I introduced him to my bride; and although he was not very much subject to refined sensations, he was struck dumb with admiration at her beauty. After having kiffed and gazed at her for fome time, he turned to me, faying, "Odds bobs, Rory! here's " a notable prize indeed, finely built and glorioufly si rigged, i' faith! if she an't well marmed when vou have the command of her, firrah, you de-" ferve to go to fea in a cockle-shell .- No offence, "I hope, niece; you must not mind what I say, 66 being (as the faying is) a plain fea-faring man, " thof mayhap I have as much regard for you as " another." She received him with great civility, told him she had longed a great while to see a perfon to whom she was so much indebted for his generosity to Mr. Random; that she looked upon him as her ncle, by which name she begged leave to call him for the future; and that she was very sure he could fay nothing that would give her the least offence. The honest captain was transported at her courteous behaviour, and infifted upon giving her away at the ceremony, fwearing that he loved her as well as if she was his own child, and that he would give two thousand guineas to the first fruit of our love, as foon as it could fqueak.—Every thing being prepared for the folemnization of our nuptials, which were to be performed privately at my father's house, the auspicious hour arrived, when Don Rodrigo and my uncle went in the coach to fetch the bride and Miss Williams; leaving me with a parson, Banter, and Strap, neither of whom had as yet feen my charming mistress.-My faithful valet, who was on the rack of impatience to behold a lady of whom he had heard fo much, no fooner understood that the coach was returned, than he placed himself at a window to have a peep at her as she alighted; and when he he faw her, clapped his hands together, turned up the white of his eyes, and with his mouth wide open, remained in a fort of extacy, which broke out into, " O Dea certe! - qualis in Eurotæ ripis, aut " per juga Cynthi exercet Diana chorus!"- The doctor and Banter were furprifed to hear my man speak Latin, but when my father led Narcissa into the room, the object of their admiration was foon changed, as appeared in the countenances of both. Indeed they must have been the most insensible of all beings. could they have beheld without emotion the divine creature that approached! She was dreffed in a fack of white fattin, embroidered on the breast with gold; the crown of her head was covered with a small French cap, from whence descended her beautiful hair in ringlets that waved upon her fnowy neck, which dignified the necklace I had given her; her looks glowed with modefly and love; and her bosom, through the veil of gauze that shaded it, afforded a prospect of Elysium!-I received this inestimable gift of providence as became me; and in a little time the clergyman did his office, my uncle, at his own earnest request, acting the part of a father to my dear Narcissa, who trembled very much, and had scarce spirits sufficient to support her under this great change of fituation. - Soon as the was mine by the laws of heaven and earth, I printed a burning kifs upon her lips, my father embraced her tenderly, my uncle hugged her with great affection, and I prefented her to my friend Banter, who faluted her in a very polite manner; Miss Williams hung round her neck, and wept plentifully; while Strap fell upon his knees, and begged to kifs his lady's hand. which she presented with great affability .- I shall not pretend to describe my own feelings at this juncture; let it suffice to say, that after having supped and entertained ourselves 'till ten o'clock, I cautioned my Narcissa against exposing her health by sitting up too late, and the was prevailed upon to withdraw with

0

her maid to an apartment destined for us. When she left the room, her face was overspread with a blush that set all my blood in a state of sermentation, and made every pulse beat with tenfold vigour! She was so cruel as to let me remain in this condition a sull half hour; when, no longer able to restrain my impatience, I broke from the company, burst into her chamber, pushed out her confidante, locked the door, and found her—O heav'n and earth! a feast, a thousand times more delicious than my most sanguine hope presaged!—But let me not prosane the chaste mysteries of Hymen.—I was the happiest of men!

In the morning I was waked by three or four drums, which Banter had placed under the window; upon which I withdrew the curtain, and enjoyed the unspeakable satisfaction of contemplating those angelic charms, which were now in my possession! Beauty! which, whether fleeping or awake, shot forth peculiar graces!-The light darting upon my Narciffa's eyes, the awoke also, and recollecting her fituation, hid her blushes in my bosom.—I was distracted with joy! I could not believe the evidence of my fenses, and looked upon all that had happened, as the fictions of a dream! In the mean time my uncle knocked at the door, and bade me turn out, for I had had a long spell .- I rose accordingly, and fent Mits Williams to her mistres, myself receiving the congratulations of captain Bowling, who rallied me in his fea-phrase, with great success .- In less than an hour, Don Rodrigo led my wife in to breakfast, where the received the compliments of the company on her looks, which, they faid, if possible, were improved by matrimony. As her delicate ears were offended with none of those indecent ambiguities, which are too often focke on fuch occasions, she behaved with dignity, unaffected modelly, and ea'e; and as a testimony of my affection and esteem, I prefented her, in prefence of them all, with a deed, by which which I settled the whole fortune I was possessed of, on her and her heirs for ever.—She accepted it with a glance of most tender acknowledgment, observed, that she could not be surprised at any thing of this kind I should do, and desired my father to take the trouble of keeping it, saying, "Next to my own, "Mr. Ranson, you are the person in whom I ought to have the greatest considence." Charmed with her prudent and ingenuous manner of proceeding, he took the paper, and assured her that it should

not lofe its value while in his cuttody.

As we had not many vifits to give and receive, the little time we stayed in town was spent in going to publick diversions, where I have the vanity to think Narcissa seldom was eclipsed.—One night in particular, we had fent our footman to keep one of the flage boxes, which we no fooner entered, than we perceived in the opposite box the squire and his lady, who feemed not a little furprifed at feeing us. I was pleafed at this opportunity of confronting them; the more, because Melinda was robbed of all her admirers by my wife, who happened that night to outshine her fifter both in beauty and dress.—She was piqued at Narcissa's victory, tossed her head a thoufand different ways, flirted her fan, looked at us with difdain, then whispered to her husband, and broke out into an affected giggle; but all her arts proved ineffectual, either to discompose Mrs. Random, or to conceal her own mortification, which at length forced her away long before the play was done. - The news of our marriage being spread, with many circumstances to our disadvantage, by the industry of this malignant creature, a certain fet of perions, fond of scandal, began to inquire into the particulars of my fortune, which they no fooner understood to be independent, than the tables were turned, and our acquaintance was courted as much as it had been despised before But Narcilla had too much dignity of pride, to encourage this change of conduct, especially cially in her relations, whom she could never be prevailed upon to see, after the malicious reports they had raised to her prejudice.

My father intends to revisit the place of his nativity—we propose to accompany him—my uncle renews his will in my favour, determining to go to sea again—we set out for Scotland—arrive at Edinburgh—purchase our paternal estate—proceed to it—balt at the town where I was educated—take up my bond to Crab—the behaviour of Potion and his wife, and one of my female cousins—our reception at the estate—Strap marries Miss Williams, and is settled by my father to his own satisfaction—I am more and more happy.

Y father intending to revisit his native country, and pay the tribute of a few tears at my mother's grave, Narcissa and I resolved to accompany him in the execution of his pious office, and accordingly prepared for the journey; in which, however, my uncle would not engage, being resolved to try his fortune once more at sea. In the mean time, he renewed his will in favour of my wise and me, and deposited it in the hands of his brother-in-law: While I (that I might not be wanting to my own interest) summoned the squire to produce his father's will at Doctor's Commons, and employed a proctor to manage the affair in my absence.

Every thing being thus fettled, we took leave of all our friends in London, and fet out for Scotland, Don Rodrigo, Narcissa, Miss Williams, and I in the coach, and Strap with two men in livery on horse-back: As we made easy stages, my charmer

held

held it out very well, till we arrived at Edinburgh, where we proposed to rest ourselves some weeks.

Here Don Rodrigo having intelligence that the foxhunter had spent his estate, which was to be exposed to sale by public auction, he determined to make a purchase of the spot where he was born, and actually

bought all the land that belonged to his father.

In a few days after this bargain was made, we left Edinburgh, in order to go and take possession; and by the way, halted one night in that town where I was educated. - Upon inquiry, I found that Mr. Crab was dead; whereupon I fent for his executor, paid the fum I owed, with interest, and took up my bond. Mr. Potion and his wife hearing of our arrival, had the affurance to come to the inn where we lodged, and fend up their names, with a defire of being permitted to pay their respects to my father and me: But their fordid behaviour towards me, when I was an orphan, had made too deep an impression on my mind, to be effaced by this mean mercenary piece of condescension; I therefore rejected their message with disdain, and bade Strap tell them, that my father and I defired to have no communication with fuch low-minded wretches as they were.

They had not been gone half an hour, when a woman, without any ceremony, opened the door of the room where we sat, and making towards my father, accossed him with, "Uncle, your servant—I" am glad to see you."—This was no other than one of my semale cousins, mentioned in the first part of my memoirs, to whom Don Rodrigo replied, "Pray, "who are you, madam?"—"O! (cried she) my cousin Rory there knows me very well.—Don't you remember me, Rory!"——"Yes, madam, (said I) for my own part, I shall never forget you.—Sir, this is one of the young ladies, who (as I have formerly told you) treated me so humanely in my childhood!" When I pronounced Vol. II.

these words, my father's resentment glowed in his visage, and he ordered her to be gone, with such a commanding aspect, that she retired in a fright, muttering curses as she went down stairs. We afterwards learned that she was married to an ensign, who had already spent all her fortune; and that her sister had bore a child to her mother's footman, who is now her husband, and keeps a petty ale-house in the country.

The fame of our flourishing condition having arrived at this place before us, we got notice that the magistrates intended next day to compliment us with the freedom of their town; upon which my father, considering their complaisance in the right point of view, ordered the horses to the coach early in the

morning.

We proceeded to our estate, which lay about twenty miles from this place; and when we came within half a league of the house, were met by a prodigious number of poor tenants, men, women, and children, who testified their joy by loud acclamations, and accompanied our coach to the gate. - As there is no part of the world, in which the peafants are more attached to their lords than in Scotland, we were almost devoured by their affection. My father had always been their favourite, and now that he appeared their master, after having been thought dead so long, their joy broke out into a thousand extravagances: When we entered the court-yard, we were furrounded by a vast number, who crowded together so closely to see us, that several were in danger of being squeezed to death; those who were near Don Rodrigo fell upon their knees, and killed his hand, or the hem of his garment, praying aloud for long life and prosperity to him; others approached Narcissa and me in the same manner; while the rest clapped their hands at a distance, and invoked heaven to shower its choicest blessings on our heads! In short, the whole scene, though rude, was so affecting, that the gentle partner of my heart wept over it, and my father him-

felf could not refrain from dropping a tear.

Having welcomed his daughter and me to his house, he ordered some bullocks to be killed, and some hogsheads of ale to be brought from the neighbouring village, to regale those honest people, who had not

enjoyed fuch a holiday for many years before.

Next day we were visited by the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, most of them our relations, one of whom brought along with him my cousin, the fox-hunter, who had staid at his house, since he was obliged to leave his own! My father was generous enough to receive him kindly, and even promise to purchase for him a commission in the army, for which he expressed great thankfulness and joy.

My charming Narcissa was universally admired and loved for her beauty, assability, and good sense; and so well pleased with the situation of the place, and the company round, that she has not, as yet, discovered.

the least defire of changing her habitation.

We had not been many days fettled, when I prevailed upon my father to pay a vifit to the village where I had been at school. Here we were received by the principal inhabitants, who entertained us in the church, where Mr. Syntax the schoolmaster (my tyrant being dead) pronounced a Latin oration in honour of our family. And none exerted themselves more than Strap's father and relations, who looked upon the honest valet as the first gentleman of their race, and honoured his benefactors accordingly.-Having received the homage of this place, we retired, leaving forty pounds for the benefit of the poor of the parish; and that very night, Strap being a little elewated with the regard that had been shewn to him. and to me on his account, ventured to tell me, that he had a fneaking kindness for Mis Williams, and that if his lady and I would use our interest in his behalf, he did not doubt that she would listen to his addreffes. Surprised at this proposal, I asked if he knew the story of that unfortunate young gentlewoman: Upon which, he replied, "Yes, yes, I know what you " mean-fhe has been unhappy, I grant you-but what of that? I am convinced of her reformation: or elfe you and my good lady would not treat her with fuch respect. - As for the censure of the world. cc I value it not a fig's end-besides the world knows on nothing of the matter." I commended his philosophy. and interested Narcissa in his cause; who interceded so effectually, that, in a little time, Miss Williams yielded her consent, and they were married with the approbation of Don Rodrigo, who gave him five hundred pounds to stock a farm, and made him overseer of his estate. My generous bed fellow gave her maid the fame fum; fo that they live in great peace and plenty within half a mile of us, and daily put up prayers for our prefervation.

If there be such a thing as true happiness on earth, I enjoy it.—The impetuous transports of my passion are now fettled and mellowed into endearing fondness and tranquillity of love, rooted by that intimate connexion and interchange of hearts, which nought but virtuous wedlock can produce. - Fortune feems determined to make ample amends for her former cruelty; for, my proctor writes, that notwithstanding the clause in my father in law's will, on which the Squire founds his claim, I shall certainly recover my wife's fortune, in confequence of a codicil annexed, which explains that clause, and limits her restriction to the age of nineteen, after which she was at her own disposal.-I would have fet out for London immediately after receiving this piece of intelligence, but my dear angel has been qua'mish of late, and begins to grow remarkably round in the waste; so that I cannot leave her in fuch an interesting fituation, which I hope will produce fomething to crown my felicity.

F I N I S,



